Immanuel Bomze
Vladimir Demyanov
Roger Fletcher
Tamás Terlaky

Nonlinear Optimization

Cetraro, Italy 2007

Editors:
Gianni Di Pillo, Fabio Schoen

Springer

C.I.M.E.

Lecture Notes in Mathematics 1988

Michel Broué

Introduction to Complex Reflection Groups and Their Braid Groups

Springer

Michel Broué
Université Paris Diderot Paris 7
UFR de Mathématiques
175 Rue du Chevaleret
75013 Paris
France
broue@math.jussieu.fr

ISBN: 978-3-642-11174-7 e-ISBN: 978-3-642-11175-4
DOI: 10.1007/978-3-642-11175-4
Springer Heidelberg Dordrecht London New York

Lecture Notes in Mathematics ISSN print edition: 0075-8434
ISSN electronic edition: 1617-9692

Library of Congress Control Number: 2009943837

Mathematics Subject Classification (2000): 20, 13, 16, 55

Cover illustration: © Anouk Grinberg

Cover design: SPi Publisher Services

Printed on acid-free paper

springer.com

Preface

Weyl groups are finite groups acting as reflection groups on rational vector spaces. It is well known that these rational reflection groups appear as "skeletons" of many important mathematical objects: algebraic groups, Hecke algebras, Artin–Tits braid groups, etc.

By extension of the base field, Weyl groups may be viewed as particular cases of finite *complex reflection groups*, *i.e.*, finite subgroups of some $\mathrm{GL}_r(\mathbb{C})$ generated by (pseudo–)reflections. Such groups have been characterized by Shephard–Todd and Chevalley as those finite subgroups of $\mathrm{GL}_r(\mathbb{C})$ whose ring of invariants in the corresponding symmetric algebra $\mathbb{C}[X_1, X_2, \ldots, X_r]$ is a regular graded ring (a polynomial algebra). The irreducible finite complex reflection groups have been classified by Shephard–Todd.

It has been recently discovered that complex reflection groups play also a key role in the structure as well as in the representation theory of finite reductive groups *i.e.*, rational points of algebraic connected reductive groups over a finite field – for a survey on that type of questions, see for example [Bro1]. Not only do complex reflection groups appear as "automizers" of peculiar tori (the "cyclotomic Sylow subgroups"), but as much as Weyl groups, they give rise to braid groups and generalized Hecke algebras which govern representation theory of finite reductive groups.

In the meantime, it has been understood that many of the known properties of Weyl groups, and more generally of Coxeter finite groups (reflection groups over $\mathbb{R}$) can be generalized to complex reflection groups – although in most cases new methods have to be found. The most spectacular result in that direction, due to Bessis [Bes3], states that the complement of the hyperplanes arrangement of a complex reflection group is $K(\pi, 1)$. The oldest (but not least important), due to Steinberg [St], states that the subgroup which fixes a subspace is still a complex reflection group (a "parabolic subgroup").

Besides, questions coming from Harmonic Analysis have brought interesting new results on the knowledge of complex reflection groups (see for example [Op1]).

The purpose of this set of Notes (which was written while the author was delivering a graduate course at the University of California Berkeley during the Spring of 2008) is to give a somewhat complete treatment of the foundations and basic properties of complex reflection groups (characterization, Steinberg theorem, Gutkin–Opdam matrices, Solomon theorem and applications, etc.) including the basic results of Springer [Sp] and Springer–Lehrer [LeSp] on eigenspaces of elements of complex reflection groups. On our way, we also introduce basic definitions and properties of the associated braid groups, as well as a quick introduction to Bessis lifting of Springer theory to braid groups.

As a consequence of our point of view – mainly aimed at further applications to braid groups, cyclotomic Hecke algebras, finite reductive groups – our base fields have characteristic zero.

Acknowledgement

These notes would never have existed without more than a decade of mathematical collaboration with Jean Michel and our frequent (and sometimes hard) discussions. I owe him several of the approaches chosen here, as well as many suggestions. Moreover, the tables reproduced in the appendix are extract from tables he built.

My thanks also go to the students of Berkeley who attended this course until the end and pushed me to be clearer.

Contents

1 Preliminaries 1
1.1 Reflections and Roots 1
1.1.1 Rank One Endomorphisms 1
1.1.2 Projections, Transvections, Reflections 2
1.1.3 Reflections 2
1.1.4 Commuting Reflections 3
1.2 Reflection Groups 4
1.2.1 Orthogonal Decomposition 5
1.2.2 The Shephard–Todd Classification 6
1.2.3 Reflecting Pairs 8

2 Prerequisites and Complements in Commutative Algebra 11
2.1 Finite Ring Extensions 11
2.1.1 Properties and Definitions 11
2.1.2 Spectra and Finite Extensions 12
2.1.3 Case of Integrally Closed Rings 13
2.1.4 Krull Dimension: First Definitions 13
2.2 Jacobson Rings and Hilbert's Nullstellensatz 15
2.2.1 On Maximal Ideal of Polynomial Algebras 15
2.2.2 Radicals and Jacobson Rings, Application to Algebraic Varieties 19
2.3 Graded Algebras and Modules 20
2.3.1 Graded Modules 20
2.3.2 Elementary Constructions 21
2.3.3 Koszul Complex 22
2.3.4 Graded Algebras and Modules 23
2.3.5 The Hilbert–Serre Theorem 23
2.3.6 Nakayama's Lemma 24
2.4 Polynomial Algebras and Parameters Subalgebras 26
2.4.1 Degrees and Jacobian 26
2.4.2 Systems of Parameters 28
2.4.3 The Chevalley Theorem 31

3 Polynomial Invariants of Finite Linear Groups 35
3.1 Finite Groups Invariants 35
3.1.1 Generalities 35
3.1.2 Case of Height One Primes 37
3.2 Finite Linear Groups on Symmetric Algebras 38
3.2.1 Ramification and Reflecting Pairs 39
3.2.2 Linear Characters Associated with Reflecting Hyperplanes 40
3.3 Coinvariant Algebra and Harmonic Polynomials 44
3.3.1 The Coinvariant Algebra 44
3.3.2 Galois Twisting of a Representation 45
3.3.3 Differential Operators, Harmonic Polynomials 46
3.4 Graded Characters and Applications 48
3.4.1 Graded Characters of Graded kG–Modules 49
3.4.2 Isotypic Components of the Symmetric Algebra 50
3.4.3 Some Numerical Identities 50
3.4.4 Isotypic Components Are Cohen–Macaulay 52
3.4.5 Computations with Power Series 52
3.4.6 A Simple Example 55

4 Finite Reflection Groups in Characteristic Zero 57
4.1 The Shephard–Todd/Chevalley–Serre Theorem 57
4.2 Steinberg Theorem and First Applications 60
4.2.1 The Jacobian as a Monomial 60
4.2.2 Action of the Normalizer and Generalized Degrees 60
4.2.3 Steinberg Theorem 62
4.2.4 Fixed Points of Elements of G 64
4.2.5 Braid Groups 65
4.3 Coinvariant Algebra and Harmonic Polynomials 67
4.3.1 On the Coinvariant Algebra 67
4.3.2 Linear Characters and Their Associated Polynomials .. 69
4.3.3 The Harmonic Elements of a Reflection Group and the Poincaré Duality 72
4.4 Application to Braid Groups 75
4.4.1 Discriminants and Length 75
4.4.2 Complement: Artin-Like Presentations of the Braid Diagrams 77
4.5 Graded Multiplicities and Solomon's Theorem 78
4.5.1 Preliminary: Graded Dimension of $(S \otimes V)^G$ 78
4.5.2 Exponents and Gutkin–Opdam Matrices 80
4.5.3 Solomon Theorem 89
4.5.4 Derivations and Differential Forms on V 91
4.5.5 First Applications of Solomon's Theorem 94

5 Eigenspaces and Regular Elements 97
5.1 Eigenspaces 97
5.1.1 Pianzola–Weiss Formula 97
5.1.2 Maximal Eigenspaces: Lehrer–Springer Theory 99
5.2 Regular Elements 104
5.2.1 First Properties 104
5.2.2 Exponents and Eigenvalues of Regular Elements 106
5.3 Regular Braid Automorphisms 112
5.3.1 Lifting Regular Automorphisms: Case When the Base Point Is an Eigenvector 112
5.3.2 Lifting Regular Automorphisms: General Case 115
5.3.3 Lifting Springer Theory 117

Coxeter and Artin–Like Presentations 119

A Coxeter and Artin–Like Presentations 119
A.1 Meaning of the Diagrams 119
A.1.1 Diagrams for the Reflection Groups 119
A.1.2 Braid Diagrams 121
A.2 Tables 124

References 133

Index 137

Chapter 1
Preliminaries

1.1 Reflections and Roots

Let k be a commutative field and let V be a finite dimensional k-vector space. We set $r := \dim_K V$. We denote by V^* the dual of V.

The group $\mathrm{GL}(V)$ acts on $V \times V^*$: if $r = (v, v^*) \in V \times V^*$ and if $g \in \mathrm{GL}(V)$, we set

$$g \cdot r := (gv, v^* \cdot g^{-1}) .$$

Let us state a list of remarks, elementary properties, definitions and notation.

1.1.1 Rank One Endomorphisms

An element $r \in (V - 0) \times (V^* - 0)$ defines an element $\overline{r}$ of rank 1 of $\mathrm{End}(V)$ as follows. Suppose $r = (v, v^*)$. Then

$$\overline{r} : x \mapsto \langle v^*, x \rangle v .$$

We denote by $\mathrm{tr}(r)$ the trace of the endomorphism $\overline{r}$. We denote by H_r its kernel and by L_r its image. Thus, for $r = (v, v^*)$, we have

$$\mathrm{tr}(r) = \langle v^*, v \rangle \quad , \quad H_r = \ker v^* \quad , \quad L_r = Kv .$$

We see that $L_r \subseteq H_r$ if and only if $\mathrm{tr}(r) = 0$.

Lemma 1.1.

1. *If we view* $\mathrm{End}(V)$ *as acted on by* $\mathrm{GL}(V)$ *through conjugation, the map* $r \mapsto \overline{r}$ *is* $\mathrm{GL}(V)$*-equivariant : the rank one endomorphism attached to* $g \cdot r$ *is* $g \overline{r} g^{-1}$.

M. Broué, *Introduction to Complex Reflection Groups and Their Braid Groups*, Lecture Notes in Mathematics 1988,
DOI 10.1007/978-3-642-11175-4_1, © Springer-Verlag Berlin Heidelberg 2010

2. *Two elements $r_1 = (v_1, v_1^*)$ and $r_2 = (v_2, v_2^*)$ of $V \times V^*$ define the same rank one endomorphism of V if and only if they are in the same orbit under $k^\times$, i.e., if there exists $\lambda \in k^\times$ such that $v_2 = \lambda v_1$ and $v_2^* = \lambda^{-1} v_1^*$.*

1.1.2 Projections, Transvections, Reflections

For $r \in (V - 0) \times (V^* - 0)$, we denote by s_r the endomorphism of V defined by the formula $s_r := 1 - \overline{r}$, or, in other words, $s_r : x \mapsto x - \langle v^*, x \rangle v$.

Note that, for $g \in \mathrm{GL}(V)$, we have

$$s_{g\cdot r} = g s_r g^{-1} .$$

Lemma 1.2.

1. *If $\mathrm{tr}(r) = 1$, we have $H_r \oplus L_r = V$, and the endomorphism s_r is nothing but the projection onto H_r parallel to L_r.*
2. *If $\mathrm{tr}(r) = 0$, we have $L_r \subseteq H_r$, $\overline{r}^2 = 0$, and the endomorphism s_r is a transvection.*

Definition 1.3. A root of V is an element r of $V \times V^*$ such that $\mathrm{tr}(r) \neq 0, 1$.

A reflection in V is an endomorphism of V of the form s_r where r is a root.

1.1.3 Reflections

From now on, we assume that s_r is a reflection. Let us set $r = (v, v^*)$.

We set $\zeta_r := 1 - \mathrm{tr}(r)$. Then we have

$$H_r = \ker(s_r - 1)\ ,\ L_r = \ker(s_r - \zeta_r 1) = \mathrm{im}\,(s_r - 1)\ ,\ \zeta_r = \det s_r \text{ and } \zeta_r \neq 0, 1 .$$

Note that the order of s_r is the order of the element ζ_r in the group $k^\times$. More generally, for $(x, x^*) \in V \times V^*$ and $n \in \mathbb{N}$, we have

$$s_r^n \cdot (x, x^*) = \left(x - \frac{1 - \zeta_r^n}{1 - \zeta_r} \langle x, v^* \rangle v\, ,\, x^* - \frac{1 - \zeta_r^{-n}}{1 - \zeta_r} \langle v, x^* \rangle v^* \right) . \tag{1.1}$$

The following lemma shows that the inverse, the transpose, the contragredient of a reflection are reflections. We omit the proof, which is straightforward.

Lemma 1.4.

1. *The conjugate of a reflection is a reflection, since* $gs_rg^{-1} = s_{g\cdot r}$.
2. *The inverse of a reflection is a reflection:* $s_r^{-1} = s_{r'}$ *where* $r' := (v, -\zeta_r^{-1}v^*)$.
3. *The transpose of a reflection in* V *is a reflection in* V^**:* ${}^ts_r = s_{{}^tr}$, *where* ${}^tr := (v^*, v)$.
4. *The contragredient of a reflection is a reflection:* ${}^ts_r^{-1} = s_{r^\vee}$ *where* $r^\vee := (-\zeta_r^{-1}v^*, v)$.

The following lemma (whose proof is also straightforward) gives several ways to index the set of reflections.

Lemma 1.5. *The maps*

$$\begin{cases} r \mapsto s_r \\ s \mapsto (\ker(s-1), \operatorname{im}(s-1), \det s) \end{cases}$$

define bijections between the following sets

- *The set of orbits of* $k^\times$ *on roots of* V,
- *The set of reflections in* V,
- *The set of triples* (H, L, ζ), *where* H *is an hyperplane in* V *and* L *is a one-dimensional subspace of* V *such that* $H \oplus L = V$, *and* ζ *is an element of* k *different from 0 and 1.*

as well as with the analogous sets obtained by replacing V *by* V^*.

A reflection is diagonalisable, hence so is its restriction to a stable subspace. The next lemma follows.

Lemma 1.6.

1. *Let* V' *be a subspace of* V *stable by a reflection* s_r. *Then*
   - *either* V' *is fixed by* s_r *(i.e.,* $V' \subseteq H_r$*),*
   - *or* V' *contains* L_r, *and then* $V' = L_r \oplus (H_r \cap V')$.
2. *Assume that* $V = V_1 \oplus V_2$ *and that* V_1 *and* V_2 *are stable by a reflection* s_r. *Then either* H_r *contains* V_1 *or* H_r *contains* V_2.

1.1.4 Commuting Reflections

A root $r = (v, v^*)$ is said to be an eigenroot of $g \in \mathrm{GL}(V)$ if there exists $\lambda \in K$ such that $g \cdot r = \lambda \cdot r = (\lambda v, \lambda^{-1}v^*)$.

Lemma 1.7. *Let r_1 and r_2 be two roots in V. We have the following four sets of equivalent assertions.*

(i) $s_{r_1} \cdot r_2 = r_2$,
(ii) $s_{r_2} \cdot r_1 = r_1$,
(iii) $L_{r_1} \subseteq H_{r_2}$ *and* $L_{r_2} \subseteq H_{r_1}$,
in which case we say that r_1 and r_2 are orthogonal and we write $r_1 \perp r_2$.

(i) $s_{r_1} \cdot r_2 = \zeta_{r_1} r_2$,
(ii) $s_{r_2} \cdot r_1 = \zeta_{r_2} r_1$,
(iii) $L_{r_1} = L_{r_2}$ *and* $H_{r_1} = H_{r_2}$.
in which case we say that r_1 and r_2 are parallel and we write $r_1 || r_2$.

(i) $s_{r_1} s_{r_2} = s_{r_2} s_{r_1}$,
(ii) r_1 *is en eigenroot of* s_{r_2} ,
(iii) r_2 *is en eigenroot of* s_{r_1} .
(iv) r_1 *and* r_2 *are either orthogonal or parallel.*

1.2 Reflection Groups

Let $\mathcal{R}$ be a set of reflections on V.

We denote by $G_{\mathcal{R}}$ (or simply G) the subgroup of $\mathrm{GL}(V)$ generated by the elements of $\mathcal{R}$.

Notice first that

$$\bigcap_{r \in \mathcal{R}} H_r = V^G \text{, the set of elements fixed by } G\,.$$

Definition 1.8. We say that $\mathcal{R}$ is complete if it is stable under $G_{\mathcal{R}}$-conjugation.

From now on, we assume that $\mathcal{R}$ is complete. Thus $G_{\mathcal{R}}$ is a (normal) subgroup of the subgroup of $\mathrm{GL}(V)$ which stabilises $\mathcal{R}$.

Let us set

$$V_{\mathcal{R}} := \sum_{r \in \mathcal{R}} L_r\,.$$

Since $\mathcal{R}$ is complete, the subspace $V_{\mathcal{R}}$ is stable by the action of G.

From now on, we shall assume that *the action of G on V is completely reducible.*

Remark 1.9. Notice that the preceding hypothesis is satisfied

- when G is finite and k of characteristic zero,
- or when k is a subfield of the field $\mathbb{C}$ of complex numbers and G preserves a positive nondegenerate hermitian form on V.

Proposition 1.10. *Assume that the action of G on V is completely reducible.*

1. *We have $V = V_{\mathcal{R}} \oplus V^G$.*
2. *The restriction from V down to $V_{\mathcal{R}}$ induces an isomorphism from G onto its image in* $\mathrm{GL}(V_{\mathcal{R}})$.

Proof (of 1.10).
(1) The subspace $V_{\mathcal{R}}$ is G-stable, hence there is a supplementary subspace V' which is G-stable. Whenever $r \in \mathcal{R}$, the space $V_{\mathcal{R}}$ contains the one-dimensional non trivial eigenspace for s_r, hence (by lemma 1.6) V' is contained in H_r ; it follows that $V' \subseteq \bigcap_{r\in\mathcal{R}} H_r$. So it suffices to prove that $V_{\mathcal{R}} \cap V^G = 0$.
(2) Since V^G is stable by G, there exists a supplementary subspace V" which is stable by G. Whenever $s_r \in \mathcal{R}$, we have $L_r \subseteq V$" (otherwise, by lemma 1.6, we have V" $\subseteq H_r$, which implies that s_r is trivial since $V = V^G \oplus V$", a contradiction). This shows that $V_{\mathcal{R}} \subseteq V$", and in particular that $V_{\mathcal{R}} \cap V^G = 0$.

1.2.1 Orthogonal Decomposition

We denote by $\sim$ the equivalence relation on the set of roots (or on the set of $k^\times$-orbits on roots, *i.e.*, on the set of reflections) as the transitive closure of the relation "*r and r' are not orthogonal*".

Lemma 1.11. *If $r \sim r'$ and if $g \in G$, then $g \cdot r \sim g \cdot r'$. In particular the equivalence classes of $\mathcal{R}$ are G-stable.*

Proof (of 1.11). It suffices to prove that the relation "*being orthogonal*" is stable under G, which is obvious.

Notice that the number of equivalence classes is finite: it is bounded by the dimension of V.

Indeed, assume that $r_1 = (v_1, v_1{}^*)$, $r_2 = (v_2, v_2{}^*) \ldots, r_m = (v_m, v_m{}^*)$ are mutually not equivalent (*i.e.*, belong to distinct equivalence classes). Let us check that $(v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_m)$ is linearly independent. Assume $\lambda_1 v_1 + \lambda_2 v_2 + \cdots + \lambda_m v_m = 0$. The scalar product with $v_i{}^*$ yields $\lambda_i \langle v_i, v_i^* \rangle = 0$, hence $\lambda_i = 0$.

Let $\mathcal{R} = \mathcal{R}_1 \dot\cup \mathcal{R}_2 \dot\cup \ldots \dot\cup \mathcal{R}_n$ be the decomposition of $\mathcal{R}$ into equivalence classes.

Let us denote by G_i the subgroup of G generated by the reflections s_r for $r \in \mathcal{R}_i$, and by V_i the subspace of V generated by the spaces L_r for $r \in \mathcal{R}_i$.
The following properties are straightforward.

Lemma 1.12.

1. *The group G_i acts trivially on $\sum_{j\neq i} V_j$.*
2. *For $1 \leq i \neq j \leq n$, G_i and G_j commute.*
3. *$G = G_1 G_2 \dots G_n$.*

Proposition 1.13. *Assume that the action of G on V is completely reducible.*

1. *For $1 \leq i \leq n$, the action of G_i on V_i is irreducible.*
2. *$V_{\mathcal{R}} = \bigoplus_{i=1}^{i=n} V_i$.*
3. *$G = G_1 \times G_2 \times \cdots \times G_n$*

Proof (of 1.13).
(1) The subspace V_i is stable under G, and the action of G on a stable subspace is completely reducible. But the image of G in $\mathrm{GL}(V_i)$ is the same as the image of G_i. So the action of G_i on V_i is completely reducible.

Assume that $\mathcal{R} = \mathcal{R}_i$ is a single equivalence class, so $V = V_{\mathcal{R}}$ and $G = G_i$. Let us prove that V is irreducible for G. Since V is completely reducible for G we may assume that $V = V' \oplus V''$ where V' and V'' are stable by G, and prove that V' or V'' equals V. Let us define

$$\mathcal{R}' := \{ s_r \in \mathcal{R} \,|\, L_r \subseteq V' \} \quad \text{and} \quad \mathcal{R}'' := \{ s_r \in \mathcal{R} \,|\, L_r \subseteq V'' \} .$$

Then by lemma 1.6, we see that whenever $r \in \mathcal{R}'$, then $V'' \subseteq H_r$, and whenever $r \in \mathcal{R}''$, then $V' \subseteq H_r$, which shows that any two elements of $\mathcal{R}'$ and $\mathcal{R}''$ are mutually orthogonal. Thus one of them has to be all of $\mathcal{R}$.

(2) By 1.12, we have $\sum_{j\neq i} V_j \subset V^{G_i}$. By (1), and by 1.10, we then get $V_i \cap \sum_{j\neq i} V_j = 0$.

(3) An element of $g \in G_i$ which also belongs to $\prod_{j\neq i} G_j$ acts trivially on V_i. Since (by (1) and by 1.10) the representation of G_i on V_i is faithful, we see that $g = 1$.

1.2.2 The Shephard–Todd Classification

Here we assume that $k = \mathbb{C}$, the field of complex numbers.

The General Infinite Family $G(de, e, r)$

Let d, e and r be three positive integers.

- Let $D_r(de)$ be the set of diagonal complex matrices with diagonal entries in the group $\boldsymbol{\mu}_{de}$ of all de–th roots of unity.

- The d–th power of the determinant defines a surjective morphism

$$\det^d : D_r(de) \twoheadrightarrow \boldsymbol{\mu}_e \,.$$

Let $A(de,e,r)$ be the kernel of the above morphism. In particular we have $|A(de,e,r)| = (de)^r/e\,.$

- Identifying the symmetric group $\mathfrak{S}_r$ with the usual $r \times r$ permutation matrices, we define

$$G(de,e,r) := A(de,e,r) \rtimes \mathfrak{S}_r \,.$$

We have $|G(de,e,r)| = (de)^r r!/e$, and $G(de,e,r)$ is the group of all monomial $r \times r$ matrices, with entries in $\boldsymbol{\mu}_{de}$, and product of all non-zero entries in $\boldsymbol{\mu}_d$.

Let $(x_1, x_2, \ldots, x_r)$ be a basis of V. We denote by $(\Sigma_j(x_1, x_2, \ldots, x_r))_{1 \leq j \leq r}$ the family of fundamental symmetric polynomials. Let us set

$$\begin{cases} f_j := \Sigma_j(x_1^{de}, x_2^{de}, \ldots, x_r^{de}) & \text{for } 1 \leq j \leq r-1\,, \\ f_r := (x_1 x_2 \cdots x_r)^d \,. \end{cases}$$

Then we have

$$\mathbb{C}[x_1, x_2, \ldots, x_r]^{G(de,e,r)} = \mathbb{C}[f_1, f_2, \ldots, f_r] \,.$$

Example 1.14.

- $G(e,e,2)$ is the dihedral group of order $2e$.
- $G(d,1,r)$ is isomorphic to the wreath product $\boldsymbol{\mu}_d \wr \mathfrak{S}_r$. For $d = 2$, it is isomorphic to the Weyl group of type B_r (or C_r).
- $G(2,2,r)$ is isomorphic to the Weyl group of type D_r.

About the Exceptional Groups

There are 34 exceptional irreducible complex reflection groups, of ranks from 2 to 8, denoted $G_4, G_5, \ldots, G_{37}$.

The rank 2 groups are connected with the finite subgroups of $\mathrm{SL}_2(\mathbb{C})$ (the *binary polyhedral groups*).

Theorem 1.15 (Shephard–Todd). *Let (V,W) be an irreducible complex reflection group. Then one of the following assertions is true:*

- *There exist integers d,e,r, with $de \geq 2$, $r \geq 1$ such that $(V,W) \simeq G(de,e,r)$.*
- *There exists an integer $r \geq 1$ such that $(V,W) \simeq (\mathbb{C}^{r-1}, \mathfrak{S}_r)$.*
- *(V,W) is isomorphic to one of the 34 exceptional groups G_n $(n = 4, \ldots, 37)$.*

Field of Definition

The following theorem has been proved (using a case by case analysis) by Bessis [Bes1] (see also [Bena]), and generalizes a well known result on Weyl groups.

Theorem–Definition 1.16 *Let (V, W) be a reflection group. Let K be the field generated by the traces on V of all elements of W. Then all irreducible KW–representations are absolutely irreducible.*

The field K is called the field of definition of the reflection group W.

- If $K \subseteq \mathbb{R}$, the group W is a (finite) *Coxeter group*.
- If $K = \mathbb{Q}$, the group W is a Weyl group.

Question 1.17. Find a "conceptual" proof of theorem 1.16.

1.2.3 Reflecting Pairs

Here we make the following hypothesis

- V is a k-vector space of dimension r,
- G is a finite subgroup of $\mathrm{GL}(V)$; we denote by $\mathrm{Ref}(G)$ the set of all reflections of G,
- the order $|G|$ of G is not divisible by the characteristic of k ; in particular the kG-module V is completely reducible.

Let X be a subspace of V.

We denote by $N_G(X)$, as "normaliser", the stabiliser of X in G, *i.e.*, the set of $g \in G$ such that $g(X) = X$.

We denote by $G(X)$ (or $C_G(X)$, as "centraliser") the fixator of X, *i.e.*, the set of $g \in G$ such that, for all $x \in X$, $g(x) = x$.

Notice that $G(X) \triangleleft N_G(X)$ and that $N_G(X)/G(X)$ is naturally isomorphic to a subgroup of $\mathrm{GL}(X)$.

Definition 1.18.

- Let H be a hyperplane of V. We say that H is a *reflecting hyperplane* for G if there exists $g \in G$, $g \neq 1$, such that $\ker(g-1) = H$.
- Let L be a line in V. We say that L is a *reflecting line* for G if there exists $g \in G$, $g \neq 1$, such that $\mathrm{im}\,(g-1) = H$.

For H a reflecting hyperplane, notice that

$$G(H) = \{1\} \bigcup \{g \in G \mid \ker(g-1) = H\}\,.$$

For L a reflecting hyperplane, we set

$$G(V/L) := \{1\} \bigcup \{g \in G \mid \mathrm{im}\,(g-1) = L\}\,.$$

Notice that $G(V/L)$ is a group: this is the group of all elements of G which stabilize L and which act trivially on V/L, a normal subgroup of $N_G(L)$.

Proposition 1.19.

1. *Let H be a reflecting hyperplane for G. There exists a unique reflecting line L such that $G(H) = G(V/L)$.*
2. *Let L be a reflecting line for G. There exists a unique reflecting hyperplane H such that $G(V/L) = G(H)$.*
   If L and H are as above, we say that (L, H) is a reflecting pair for G, and we set $G(H, V/L) := G(H) = G(V/L)$.
3. *If (L, H) is a reflecting pair, then*
   a. *$G(H, V/L)$ consists in the identity and of reflections s_r where $H_r = H$ and $L_r = L$,*
   b. *$G(H, V/L)$ is a cyclic group, isomorphic to a subgroup of $k^\times$,*
   c. *we have $N_G(H) = N_G(L)$.*

Proof (of 1.19).

- Assume $G(H) \neq \{1\}$. Since the action of $G(H)$ on V is completely reducible, there is a line L which is stable by $G(H)$ and such that $H \oplus L = V$. Such a line is obviously the eigenspace (corresponding to an eigenvalue different from 1) for any non trivial element of $G(H)$. This shows that L is uniquely determined, and that $G(H)$ consists of 1 and of reflections with hyperplane H and line L. It follows also that $G(H) \subseteq G(V/L)$. Notice that H and L are the isotypic components of V under the action of $G(H)$.
- Assume $G(V/L) \neq \{1\}$. Since the action of $G(V/L)$ on V is completely reducible, there is a hyperplane H which is stable by $G(V/L)$ and such that $L \oplus H = V$. Such an hyperplane is clearly the kernel of any nontrivial element of $G(V/L)$. This shows that H is uniquely determined, and that $G(V/L) \subseteq G(H)$.

We let the reader conclude the proof.

Chapter 2
Prerequisites and Complements in Commutative Algebra

2.1 Finite Ring Extensions

Proposition 2.1. *Let A be a subring of a ring B, and let $x \in B$. The following assertions are equivalent:*

(i) The element x is integral over A, i.e., there exists a monic polynomial $P(t) = t^n + a_1 t^{n-1} + \cdots + a_{n-1}t + a_n \in A[t]$ such that $P(x) = 0$.
(ii) The subring $A[x]$ of B generated by A and x is a finitely generated A–module.
(iii) There exists a subring A' of B, containing $A[x]$, which is a finitely generated A–module.

The proof is classical and is left to the reader.

2.1.1 Properties and Definitions

I1. If A is a subring of B, the set of elements of B which are integral over A is a subring of B, called the integral closure of A in B.

For S a multiplicatively stable subset of A, if $\overline{A}$ denotes the integral closure of A in B, then $S^{-1}\overline{A}$ is the integral closure of $S^{-1}A$ in $S^{-1}B$.

I2. One says that B is integral over A if it is equal to the integral closure of A.

I3. One says that B is finite over A (or that B/A is finite) if B is a finitely generated A–module.

The following assertions are equivalent:

(i) The extension B/A is finite.
(ii) B is a finitely generated A–algebra and is integral over A.
(iii) B is generated as an A–algebra by a finite number of elements which are integral over A.

I4. An integral domain A is said to be integrally closed if it is integrally closed in its field of fractions.

M. Broué, *Introduction to Complex Reflection Groups and Their Braid Groups*, Lecture Notes in Mathematics 1988,
DOI 10.1007/978-3-642-11175-4_2,

Example 2.2.

- A unique factorisation domain, a Dedekind domain are integrally closed.
- The polynomial ring $A[t_1, t_2, \ldots, t_r]$ is integrally closed if and only if A is integrally closed (see for example [Bou2], chap.5, §1, n^{o}3).

I5. If B is integral over A, then B is a field if and only if A is a field.

2.1.2 Spectra and Finite Extensions

In all the sequel, we suppose B/A finite.

Proposition 2.3 (Cohen–Seidenberg Theorem). *The map* $\mathrm{Spec}(B) \to \mathrm{Spec}(A)$ *is surjective: for each* $\mathfrak{p} \in \mathrm{Spec}(A)$*, there exists* $\mathfrak{q} \in \mathrm{Spec}(B)$ *such that* $\mathfrak{q} \cap A = \mathfrak{p}$ *(we then say that* $\mathfrak{q}$ *"lies above* $\mathfrak{p}$*"). Moreover,*

1. *If both* $\mathfrak{q}_1$ *and* $\mathfrak{q}_2$ *lie above* $\mathfrak{p}$*, then* $\mathfrak{q}_1 \subset \mathfrak{q}_2$ *implies* $\mathfrak{q}_1 = \mathfrak{q}_2$*,*
2. *If* $\mathfrak{p}_1, \mathfrak{p} \in \mathrm{Spec}(A)$ *with* $\mathfrak{p}_1 \subset \mathfrak{p}$*, and if* $\mathfrak{q}_1 \in \mathrm{Spec}(B)$ *lies above* $\mathfrak{p}_1$*, then there exists* $\mathfrak{q} \in \mathrm{Spec}(B)$ *which lies above* $\mathfrak{p}$ *and such that* $\mathfrak{q}_1 \subset \mathfrak{q}$*.*
3. *For each* $\mathfrak{p} \in \mathrm{Spec}(A)$*, there is only a finite number of prime ideals of B which lie above* $\mathfrak{p}$*.*

Proof (of 2.3). We localize at $\mathfrak{p}$: the extension $B_{\mathfrak{p}}/A_{\mathfrak{p}}$ is finite, and the prime ideals of B which lie above $\mathfrak{p}$ correspond to the prime ideals of $B_{\mathfrak{p}}$ which lie above $\mathfrak{p}A_{\mathfrak{p}}$. Since $\mathfrak{p}A_{\mathfrak{p}}$ is maximal in $A_{\mathfrak{p}}$, the proposition thus follows from the following lemma.

Proposition 2.4. *Suppose that B/A is finite.*

1. *The map* $\mathrm{Spec}(B) \to \mathrm{Spec}(A)$ *induces a surjective map*

$$\mathrm{MaxSpec}(B) \twoheadrightarrow \mathrm{MaxSpec}(A)\,.$$

2. *Any prime ideal of B which lies above a maximal ideal of A is also maximal.*

Proof (of 2.4). To prove that $\mathfrak{n}$ is a maximal ideal of B if and only if $\mathfrak{n} \cap A$ is a maximal ideal of A, we divide by $\mathfrak{n}$, and we now have to prove that, if B is integral over A, with B an integral domain, then B is a field if and only if A is a field (see I5 above).

To prove the surjectivity of the map $\mathrm{MaxSpec}(B) \to \mathrm{MaxSpec}(A)$, it suffices to prove that, for $\mathfrak{m} \in \mathrm{MaxSpec}(A)$, we have $\mathfrak{m}B \neq B$. Now if $\mathfrak{m}B = B$, then there exists $a \in \mathfrak{m}$ such that $(1-a)B = 0$ (it is left to the reader to prove that), whence $1 - a = 0$ and $1 \in \mathfrak{m}$.

2.1.3 Case of Integrally Closed Rings

Proposition 2.5. *Let A and B be integrally closed rings with field of fractions K and L respectively. Suppose B is a finite extension of A. Suppose the extension L/K is normal, and let $G := \mathrm{Aut}_K(L)$ be the Galois group of this extension. Then, for each $\mathfrak{p} \in \mathrm{Spec}(A)$, the group G acts transitively on the set of $\mathfrak{q} \in \mathrm{Spec}(B)$ which lie above $\mathfrak{p}$.*

Proof (of 2.5). We first suppose that the extension L/K is separable, and thus is a Galois extension. Then we have $K = L^G$, so that $A = B^G$ (indeed, every element of B^G is integral over A and thus belongs to K, whence to A since A is integrally closed). Let $\mathfrak{q}$ and $\mathfrak{q}'$ be two prime ideals of B which lie above $\mathfrak{p}$. Suppose that $\mathfrak{q}'$ is none of the $g(\mathfrak{q})$'s $(g \in G)$. Then $\mathfrak{q}'$ is not contained in any of the $g(\mathfrak{q})$'s $(g \in G)$, and there exists $x \in \mathfrak{q}'$ which doesn't belong to any of the $g(\mathfrak{q})$'s $(g \in G)$. But then $\prod_{g \in G} g(x)$ is an element of $A \cap \mathfrak{q}'$ which doesn't belong to $A \cap \mathfrak{q}$, which is a contradiction.

We now deal with the general case. Let p be the characteristic of K. Let $K' := L^G$. Then L/K' is a Galois extension with Galois group G, and the extension K'/K is purely inseparable, *i.e.*, for each $x \in K'$, there exists an integer n such that $x^{p^n} \in K$. Let A' be the integral closure of A in K'. Then there is a unique prime ideal of A' which lies above $\mathfrak{p}$, namely $\mathfrak{p}' := \{x \in A' \mid (\exists n \in \mathbb{N})(x^{p^n} \in \mathfrak{p})\}$. Proposition 2.5 thus follows from the above case $K' = K$.

Proposition 2.6. *Let A be an integrally closed ring and let K be its field of fractions. Let B be an A–algebra which is finite over A. Suppose B is an integral domain and let L be its field of fractions. Let $\mathfrak{p}, \mathfrak{p}_1 \in \mathrm{Spec}(A)$ be such that $\mathfrak{p} \subset \mathfrak{p}_1$, and let $\mathfrak{q}_1 \in \mathrm{Spec}(B)$ lie above $\mathfrak{p}_1$. Then there exists $\mathfrak{q} \in \mathrm{Spec}(B)$ which lies above $\mathfrak{p}$ and such that $\mathfrak{q} \subset \mathfrak{q}_1$.*

Proof (of 2.6). Let M be a finite normal extension of K containing L and let C be the normal closure of A in M. By 2.3, we know that there exist prime ideals $\mathfrak{r}_1$ and $\mathfrak{r}$ of C which lie above $\mathfrak{q}_1$ and $\mathfrak{p}$ respectively. Since $\mathfrak{r}_1$ lies above $\mathfrak{p}_1$, we also know that there exists $\mathfrak{r}_1' \in \mathrm{Spec}(C)$ which lies above $\mathfrak{p}_1$, and such that $\mathfrak{r} \subset \mathfrak{r}_1'$. By 2.5, there exists $g \in \mathrm{Gal}(M/K)$ such that $\mathfrak{r}_1 = g(\mathfrak{r}_1')$. We then set $\mathfrak{q} := g(\mathfrak{r}) \cap B$.

2.1.4 Krull Dimension: First Definitions

Let A be a ring. A *chain of length* n of prime ideals of A is a strictly increasing sequence

$$\mathfrak{p}_0 \subsetneq \mathfrak{p}_1 \subsetneq \cdots \subsetneq \mathfrak{p}_n$$

of prime ideals of A.

• If the set of lengths of chains of prime ideals of A is bounded, then the greatest of these lengths is called *Krull dimension of* A, and written $\mathrm{Krdim}(A)$. Otherwise, A is said to have infinite Krull dimension. The Krull dimension of the ring 0 is, by definition, $-\infty$.

• If M is an A–module, then we call *Krull dimension of* M and write $\mathrm{Krdim}_A(M)$ the Krull dimension of the ring $A/\mathrm{Ann}_A(M)$. Note that

$$\mathrm{Krdim}_A(M) \leq \mathrm{Krdim}(A)\,.$$

• For $\mathfrak{p} \in \mathrm{Spec}(A)$, we call *height of* $\mathfrak{p}$ and write $\mathrm{ht}(\mathfrak{p})$ the Krull dimension of the ring $A_{\mathfrak{p}}$. Thus $\mathrm{ht}(\mathfrak{p})$ is the maximal length of chains of prime ideals of A whose greatest element is $\mathfrak{p}$. The height of $\mathfrak{p}$ is also sometimes called *codimension of* $\mathfrak{p}$.

. *Some properties.*

- $\mathrm{Krdim}(A) = \sup\{\mathrm{ht}(\mathfrak{m})\}_{\mathfrak{m}\in\mathrm{MaxSpec}(A)}$,
- $\mathrm{Krdim}(A/\mathrm{Nilrad}(A)) = \mathrm{Krdim}(A)$.
- If B is an A–algebra which is finite over A, then $\mathrm{Krdim}(B) = \mathrm{Krdim}(A)$.

Lemma 2.7. *Let k be a field. The Krull dimension of the algebra of polynomials in r indeterminates $k[t_1, t_2, \ldots, t_r]$ over k is r.*

Proof (of 2.7). We first note that there exists a chain of prime ideals of length r, namely the sequence $0 \subset (t_1) \subset (t_1, t_2) \subset \cdots \subset (t_1, t_1, \ldots, t_r)$. It is therefore sufficient to prove that the Krull dimension of $k[t_1, t_2, \ldots, t_r]$ is at most r.

If K/k is a field extension, then we denote by $\mathrm{trdeg}_k(K)$ its transcendance degree.

Proposition 2.8. *Let A and B be two integral domains which are finitely generated k–algebras, with field of fractions K and L respectively. Suppose there exists a surjective k–algebra homomorphism $f : A \to B$.*

1. *We have* $\mathrm{trdeg}_k(L) \leq \mathrm{trdeg}_k(K)$.
2. *If* $\mathrm{trdeg}_k(L) = \mathrm{trdeg}_k(K)$, *then f is an isomorphism.*

Proof (of 2.8).

(1) Any generating system for A as k–algebra is also a generating system for K over k. Thus K has a finite transcendance degree over k, and, if this degree is n and if $n \neq 0$, then there exists a system of n algebraically independent elements in A which is a basis of transcendance for K over k. The same conclusion applies to B and L. Now, by inverse image by f, any k–algebraically independent system of elements of B can be lifted to a system of k–algebraically independent elements of A. This proves the first assertion.

(2) Suppose that $\mathrm{trdeg}_k(L) = \mathrm{trdeg}_k(K)$.

If $\mathrm{trdeg}_k(L) = \mathrm{trdeg}_k(K) = 0$, then K and L are algebraic extensions of k, and, for each $a \in K$, a and $f(a)$ have the same minimal polynomial over k. This proves that the kernel of f is just 0.

Suppose now that $\mathrm{trdeg}_k(L) = \mathrm{trdeg}_k(K) = n > 0$. We know (cf. proof of (1) above) that there exists a basis of transcendance $(a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n)$ for K over k which consists of elements of A, and such that $(f(a_1), f(a_2), \dots, f(a_n))$ is a basis of transcendance for L over k. In particular, we see that the restriction of f to $k[a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n]$ is an isomorphism onto $k[f(a_1), f(a_2), \dots, f(a_n)]$, and induces an isomorphism

$$k(a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n) \xrightarrow{\sim} k(f(a_1), f(a_2), \dots, f(a_n)) .$$

If $a \in A$ has minimal polynomial $P(t)$ over $k(a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n)$, then $f(a)$ has minimal polynomial $f(P(t))$ over $k(f(a_1), f(a_2), \dots, f(a_n))$, which proves that f is injective, whence is an isomorphism.

Let then $\mathfrak{p}_0 \subset \mathfrak{p}_1 \subset \cdots \subset \mathfrak{p}_n$ be a chain of prime ideals of $k[t_1, t_2, \dots, t_r]$. Applying the above lemma to the sequence of algebras $k[t_1, t_2, \dots, t_r]/\mathfrak{p}_j$, we see that, for each j $(0 \le j \le n)$, writing K_j for the field of fractions of $k[t_1, t_2, \dots, t_r]/\mathfrak{p}_j$, we have $\mathrm{trdeg}_k K_j \le \mathrm{trdeg}_k K_0 - j \le r - j$. It follows in particular that $n \le r$.

Corollary 2.9. *Let A be an integral domain which is a finitely generated algebra over a field k. Let K be its field of fractions. Then*

$$\mathrm{Krdim}(A) = \mathrm{trdeg}_k(K) .$$

Proposition 2.10. *Let $A = k[x_1, x_2, \dots, x_r]$ be a finitely generated algebra over a field k, generated by r elements $x_1, x_2, \dots, x_r$. We have* $\mathrm{Krdim}(A) \le r$, *and* $\mathrm{Krdim}(A) = r$ *if and only if $x_1, x_2, \dots, x_r$ are algebraically independent.*

Proof (of 2.10). Consider r indeterminates $t_1, t_2, \dots, t_r$. Let $\mathfrak{A}$ be the kernel of the homomorphism from the polynomial algebra $k[t_1, t_2, \dots, t_r]$ to A such that $t_j \mapsto x_j$. The algebra A is isomorphic to $k[t_1, t_2, \dots, t_r]/\mathfrak{A}$. We thus see that $\mathrm{Krdim}(A) \le r$. Moreover, if $\mathrm{Krdim}(A) = r$, then we see that

$$\mathrm{Krdim}(k[t_1, t_2, \dots, t_r]) = \mathrm{Krdim}(k[t_1, t_2, \dots, t_r]/\mathfrak{A}) ,$$

whence $\mathfrak{A} = 0$ since 0 is a prime ideal of $k[t_1, t_2, \dots, t_r]$.

2.2 Jacobson Rings and Hilbert's Nullstellensatz

2.2.1 On Maximal Ideal of Polynomial Algebras

Let A be a commutative ring (with unity), and let $A[X]$ be a polynomial algebra over A.

Whenever $\mathfrak{A}$ is an ideal of $A[X]$, let us denote by $\overline{A}$ and x respectively the images of A and x through the natural epimorphism $A[X] \twoheadrightarrow A[X]/\mathfrak{A}$. Thus we have

$$\overline{A} = A/A \cap \mathfrak{A} \quad \text{and} \quad A[X] = \overline{A}[x]\,.$$

Note that if $\mathfrak{P}$ is a prime ideal of $A[X]$, then $\mathfrak{P} \cap A$ is a prime ideal of A. We shall be concerned by the case of *maximal* ideals.

Let us point out two very different behaviour of maximal ideals of $A[X]$ with respect to A.

- If $\mathfrak{M}$ is a maximal ideal of $\mathbb{Z}[X]$, then $\mathfrak{M} \cap \mathbb{Z} \neq \{0\}$ (this will be proved below: see 2.11, (3)).
  As a consequence, a maximal ideal $\mathfrak{M}$ of $\mathbb{Z}[X]$ can be described as follows: there is a prime number p and a polynomial $P(X) \in \mathbb{Z}[X]$ which becomes irreducible in $(\mathbb{Z}/p\mathbb{Z})[X]$ such that $\mathfrak{M} = p\mathbb{Z}[X] + P(X)\mathbb{Z}[X]$.
  Thus the quotients of $\mathbb{Z}[X]$ by maximal ideals are the finite fields.
- Let p be a prime number, and let $\mathbb{Z}_p := \{a/b \in \mathbb{Q} \mid p \nmid b\}$. Then $\mathbb{Z}_p[1/p] = \mathbb{Q}$, which shows that $\mathfrak{M} := (1-pX)\mathbb{Z}_p[X]$ is a maximal ideal of $\mathbb{Z}_p[X]$. Notice that here $\mathfrak{M} \cap \mathbb{Z}_p = \{0\}$.

Let us try to examine these questions through the following proposition.

Proposition 2.11.

1. *If there is* $\mathfrak{M} \in \mathrm{Spec}^{\max}(A[X]$ *such that* $\mathfrak{M} \cap A = \{0\}$*, then there exists* $a \in A^* := A - \{0\}$ *such that* $(1 - aX)A[X] \in \mathrm{Spec}^{\max}(A[X]$.
   In other words: if there exists x *in an extension of* A *such that* $A[x]$ *is a field, then there is* $a \in A^*$ *such that* $A[1/a]$ *is a field.*
2. *Let* $\mathrm{Spec}^*(A)$ *be the set of all nonzero prime ideals of* A*. We have*
$$\bigcap_{\mathfrak{p} \in \mathrm{Spec}^*(A)} \mathfrak{p} = \{0\} \cup \{a \in A^* \mid A[1/a] \textit{ is a field}\}\,.$$
3. *Assume* $\bigcap_{\mathfrak{p} \in \mathrm{Spec}^*(A)} \mathfrak{p} = \{0\}$*. Then for all* $\mathfrak{M} \in \mathrm{Spec}^{\max}(A[X]$ *we have* $\mathfrak{M} \cap A \neq \{0\}$*.*
   In other words: there is no x *such that* $A[x]$ *is a field.*

Proof (of 2.11).
(1) Assume that $A[x]$ is a field. Then A is an integral domain, and if F denotes its field of fractions, we have $A[x] = F[x]$. Since $F[x]$ is a field, x is algebraic over F, hence a root of a polynomial with coefficients in A. If a is the coefficient of the highest degree term of that polynomial, x is integral over $A[1/a]$. Whence $A[x]$ is integral over $A[1/a]$, and since $A[x]$ is a field, it follows that $A[1/a]$ is a field.

(2) Assume first that $a \in \bigcap_{\mathfrak{p} \in \mathrm{Spec}^*(A)} \mathfrak{p}$ and $a \neq 0$. We must show that $A[1/a]$ is a field.

There is a maximal ideal $\mathfrak{M}$ of $A[X]$ containing $(1 - aX)A[X]$.

- We then have $\mathfrak{M} \cap A = \{0\}$. Indeed, if it were not the case, we would have $\mathfrak{M} \cap A \in \mathrm{Spec}^*(A)$, hence $a \in \mathfrak{M} \cap A$, then $a \in \mathfrak{M}$, $aX \in \mathfrak{M}$, so $1 \in \mathfrak{M}$.
- Let x be the image of X in $A[X]/\mathfrak{M}$. Thus $A[x]$ is a field. But $1 - ax = 0$, proving that $x = 1/a$ and $A[1/a]$ is a field.

Assume now that $A[1/a]$ is a field, hence $(1 - aX)A[X] \in \mathrm{Spec}^{\max}(A[X])$. Let $\mathfrak{p} \in \mathrm{Spec}^*(A)$. Then $\mathfrak{p} \not\subseteq (1 - aX)A[X]$, since $(1 - aX)A[X] \cap A = \{0\}$. It follows that $\mathfrak{p}A[X] + (1 - aX)A[X] = A$. Interpreted in the polyomial ring $(A/\mathfrak{p})[X]$, that equality shows that the polynomial $1 - \overline{a}X$ is invertible, which implies that $\overline{a} = 0$, *i.e.*, $a \in \mathfrak{P}$.

(3) Assume that $A[x]$ is a field. By (1), there is $a \in A^*$ such that $A[1/a]$ is a field. By (2), we know that $a \in \bigcap_{\mathfrak{p} \in \mathrm{Spec}^*(A)} \mathfrak{p}$, a contradiction.

Remark 2.12. The assertion (3) of the preceding proposition shows in particular that if A is a principal ideal domain with infinitely many prime ideals (like $\mathbb{Z}$ or $k[X]$ for example), then whenever $\mathfrak{M} \in \mathrm{Spec}^{\max}(A[X])$, we have $\mathfrak{M} \cap A \neq \{0\}$, hence $\mathfrak{M} \cap A \in \mathrm{Spec}^{\max}(A)$.

Theorem–Definition 2.13 *The following assertions are equivalent:*

(J1) Whenever $\mathfrak{p} \in \mathrm{Spec}(A)$*, we have*

$$\mathfrak{p} = \bigcap_{\substack{\mathfrak{m} \in \mathrm{Spec}^{\max}(A) \\ \mathfrak{p} \subseteq \mathfrak{m}}} \mathfrak{m} .$$

(J2) Whenever $\mathfrak{M} \in \mathrm{Spec}^{\max}(A[X])$*, we have* $\mathfrak{M} \cap A \in \mathrm{Spec}^{\max}(A)$*.*

A ring which fulfills the preceding conditions is called a Jacobson ring.

Proof (of 2.13). Let us first notice that both properties (J1) and (J2) transfer to quotients: if A satisfies (J1) (respectively (J2)), and if $\mathfrak{a}$ is an ideal of A, then $A/\mathfrak{a}$ satisfies (J1) (respectively (J2) as well.

Let us show (J1) $\Longrightarrow$ (J2). Let $\mathfrak{M} \in \mathrm{Spec}^{\max}(A[X])$. We set $A[X]/\mathfrak{M} = (A/\mathfrak{M} \cap A)[x]$.

We have $\mathfrak{M} \cap A \in \mathrm{Spec}(A)$, hence $\mathfrak{M} \cap A$ is an intersection of maximal ideals of A. If $\mathfrak{M} \cap A$ is not maximal, it is an intersection of maximal ideals in which it is properly contained, thus in the ring $A/\mathfrak{M} \cap A$, we have

$$\bigcap_{\mathfrak{p} \in \mathrm{Spec}^*(A/\mathfrak{M} \cap A)} \mathfrak{p} = \{0\} ,$$

which shows (by 2.11, (3)) that $(A/\mathfrak{M} \cap A)[x]$ cannot be a field, a contradiction.

Let us show (J2) $\Longrightarrow$ (J1). Let $\mathfrak{p} \in \mathrm{Spec}(A)$. Working in $A/\mathfrak{p}$, we see that it suffices to prove that if A is an integral domain which satisfies (J2), then the intersection of maximal ideals is $\{0\}$.

Let $a \in \bigcap_{\mathfrak{m} \in \mathrm{Spec}^{\max}(A)} \mathfrak{m}$. Thus whenever $\mathfrak{M} \in \mathrm{Spec}^{\max}(A[X])$, we have $a \in \mathfrak{M}$, hence $aX \in \mathfrak{M}$, which proves that $1 - aX$ is invertible, hence $a = 0$.

Let us emphasize the defining property of Jacobson rings, by stating the following proposition (which is nothing but a reformulation of property (J2)).

Proposition 2.14. *The following two assertions are equivalent:*

(i) *A is a Jacobson ring.*
(ii) *If $\overline{A}[x]$ is a quotient of $A[X]$ which is a field, then $\overline{A}$ is a field and x is algebraic over $\overline{A}$.*

Remark 2.15. Let us immediately quote some examples and counterexamples of Jacobson rings:

- Examples of Jacobson rings: fields, principal ideal domains with infinitely many prime ideals, quotients of Jacobson rings.
- Non Jacobson rings: discrete valuation rings.

The next theorem enlarges the set of examples of Jacobson ring to all the finitely generated algebras over a Jacobson ring.

Theorem 2.16. *Let A be a Jacobson ring.*

1. *$A[X]$ is a Jacobson ring.*
2. *If B is a finitely generated A–algebra, then B is a Jacobson ring.*

Lemma 2.17.

1. *Let A be a Jacobson ring. Assume that $\overline{A}[v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_r]$ is a finitely generated A–algebra which is a field. Then $\overline{A}$ is a field, and $\overline{A}[v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_r]$ is an algebraic (hence finite) extension of $\overline{A}$.*
2. *Let k be a field. If $k[v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_r]$ is a finitely generated k–algebra which is a field, then it is an algebraic (hence finite) extension of k.*
3. *Let k be an algebraically closed field. If $k[v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_r]$ is a finitely generated k–algebra which is a field, then it coincides with k.*

Assertion (3) of the preceding corollary may be reformulated as Hilbert's Nullstellensatz.

Theorem 2.18 (Hilbert's Nullstellensatz). *Let k be an algebraically closed field. The map*

$$\begin{aligned} k^r &\longrightarrow \operatorname{Spec}^{\max}(k[v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_r]) \\ (\lambda_1, \lambda_2, \ldots, \lambda_r) &\mapsto \langle v_1 - \lambda_1, v_2 - \lambda_2, \ldots, v_r - \lambda_r \rangle \end{aligned}$$

is a bijection.

Proof (of 2.16). Let us prove (1).

Let $\mathfrak{M}$ be a maximal ideal of $A[X, Y]$. We set

$$\begin{aligned} &\overline{A} := A/\mathfrak{M} \cap A\,, \\ &\overline{A}[x] := A[X]/\mathfrak{M} \cap A[X] \;\text{ and }\; \overline{A}[y] := A[Y]/\mathfrak{M} \cap A[Y]\,, \\ &\overline{A}[x, y] := A[X, Y]/\mathfrak{M}\,. \end{aligned}$$

We have to prove that $\overline{A}[x]$ is a field.

Since $\overline{A}[x, y]$ is a field, $\overline{A}$ is an integral domain, and if k denotes its field of fractions, we have $\overline{A}[x, y] = k[x, y]$.

Since $k[x, y] = k[x][y]$ is a field, x is not transcendental (by 2.11, (3)) over k, hence $k[x]$ is a field. As in the proof of 2.11, (1), we see that there exists $a \in A^*$ such that x is integral over $\overline{A}[1/a]$.

Similarly, there exists $b \in A^*$ such that y is integral over $\overline{A}[1/b]$. It follows that $\overline{A}[x, y]$ is integral over $\overline{A}[1/ab]$. Since $\overline{A}[x, y]$ is a field, it implies that $\overline{A}[1/ab]$ is a field.

Now since A is a Jacobson ring, it follows from Proposition 3 that $\overline{A}$ is a field, *i.e.*, $\overline{A} = k$. We have already seen that $k[x]$ is a field, proving that $\overline{A}[x]$ is a field.

Let us prove (2).

By induction on r, it follows from (1) that, for all r, $A[v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_r]$ is a Jacobson ring. So are the quotients of these algebras, which are the finitely generated A–algebras.

Proof (of 2.17).

(1) Assume that $\overline{A}[v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_r]$ is a field. Since $\overline{A}[v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_{r-1}]$ is a Jacobson ring (by theorem 4, (2)), it follows from Proposition 3 that $\overline{A}\,[v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_{r-1}]$ is a field over which v_r is algebraic. Repeating the argument leads to the required statement.

(2) and (3) are immediate consequences of (1).

2.2.2 Radicals and Jacobson Rings, Application to Algebraic Varieties

Theorem–Definition 2.19

1. *The Jacobson radical of a ring A is the ideal*

$$\mathrm{Rad}(A) := \bigcap_{\mathfrak{m} \in \mathrm{Spec}^{\max}(A)} \mathfrak{m}\,.$$

   The Jacobson radical coincides with the set of elements $a \in A$ such that, for all $x \in A$, $(1 - ax)$ is invertible.

2. *The nilradical of a ring A is the ideal*

$$\mathrm{Nilrad}(A) := \bigcap_{\mathfrak{p} \in \mathrm{Spec}(A)} \mathfrak{p}\,.$$

   The nilradical coincides with the set of nilpotent elements of A.

Proof (of 2.19). We prove only (2). It is clear that any nilpotent element of A belongs to $\mathrm{Nilrad}(A)$. Let us prove the converse.

Whenever $\mathfrak{M}$ is a maximal ideal of $A[X]$, we know that $\mathfrak{M} \cap A$ is a prime ideal of A. It implies that $\mathrm{Nilrad}(A) \subset \mathrm{Rad}(A)$, and thus for $a \in \mathrm{Nilrad}(A)$, the polynomial $(1 - aX)$ is invertible, which implies that a is nilpotent.

Now if A is a Jacobson ring, it follows from 2.13 that

$$\mathrm{Rad}(A) = \mathrm{Nilrad}(A)\,.$$

Applying that remark to a quotient $A/\mathfrak{a}$ of a Jacobson ring, we get the following proposition.

Lemma 2.20. *Let A be a Jacobson ring, and let $\mathfrak{a}$ be an ideal of A. We have*

$$\bigcap_{\substack{\mathfrak{m}\in\mathrm{Spec}^{\max}(A)\\ \mathfrak{a}\subseteq\mathfrak{m}}} \mathfrak{m} = \{a\in A \mid (\exists n\geq 0)(a^n\in\mathfrak{a})\}\,.$$

Applying the preceding proposition to the case where $A = k[X_1,\dots,X_r]$ for k algebraically closed gives the "strong form" of Hilbert's Nullstellensatz.

Corollary 2.21 (Strong Nullstellensatz). *Let k be an algebraically closed field. For $\mathfrak{A}$ an ideal of $k[X_1,X_2,\dots,X_r]$, let us set*

$$\mathcal{V}(\mathfrak{A}) := \{(\lambda_1,\lambda_2,\dots,\lambda_r)\in k^r \mid (\forall P\in\mathfrak{A})(P(\lambda_1,\lambda_2,\dots,\lambda_r)=0)\}\,.$$

If $Q\in k[X_1,X_2,\dots,X_r]$ is such that

$$(\forall(\lambda_1,\lambda_2,\dots,\lambda_r)\in\mathcal{V}(\mathfrak{A}))(Q(\lambda_1,\lambda_2,\dots,\lambda_r))=0)\,,$$

then there exists $n\geq 0$ such that $Q^n\in\mathfrak{A}$.

Proof (of 2.21). Translating *via* the dictionary $k^r\longleftrightarrow\mathrm{Spec}^{\max}(k[X_1,X_2,\dots,X_r])$, we see that

$$\mathcal{V}(\mathfrak{A})\longleftrightarrow\{\mathfrak{M}\in\mathrm{Spec}^{\max}(k[X_1,X_2,\dots,X_r]) \mid \mathfrak{A}\subseteq\mathfrak{M}\}\,,$$

while the hypothesis on Q translates to

$$Q\in\bigcap_{\substack{\mathfrak{M}\in\mathrm{Spec}^{\max}(k[X_1,X_2,\dots,X_r])\\ \mathfrak{A}\subseteq\mathfrak{M}}}\mathfrak{M}\,.$$

2.3 Graded Algebras and Modules

2.3.1 Graded Modules

Let k be a ring. We call *graded k–module* any k–module of the form

$$M = \bigoplus_{n=-\infty}^{n=\infty} M_n$$

where, for each n, M_n is a finitely generated k–module, and $M_n = 0$ whenever $n < N$ for some integer N (*i.e.*, “for n small enough”).

For each integer n, the non-zero elements of M_n are said to be *homogeneous of degree n*. If $x = \sum_n x_n$ where $x_n \in M_n$, then the element x_n is called the *homogeneous component of degree n* of x.

A graded module homomorphism $M \to N$ is a linear map $f : M \to N$ such that, for each $n \in \mathbb{Z}$, we have $f(M_n) \subset N_n$.

From now on, we suppose that *k is a field*. The graded k–modules are then called *graded k–vector spaces*.

We set $\mathbb{Z}((q)) := \mathbb{Z}[[q]][q^{-1}]$, the ring of formal Laurent series with coefficients in $\mathbb{Z}$. *The graded dimension* of M is the element of $\mathbb{Z}((q))$ defined by

$$\mathrm{grdim}_k(M) := \sum_{n=-\infty}^{\infty} \dim_k(M_n) q^n \,.$$

2.3.2 Elementary Constructions

- Direct sum: if M and N are two graded modules, then the graded module $M \oplus N$ is defined by the condition $(M \oplus N)_n := M_n \oplus N_n$. If k is a field, then we have

$$\mathrm{grdim}_k(M \oplus N) = \mathrm{grdim}_k(M) + \mathrm{grdim}_k(N) \,.$$

- Tensor product: if M and N are two graded modules, then the graded module $M \otimes N$ is defined by the condition $(M \otimes N)_n := \bigoplus_{i+j=n} M_i \otimes N_j$. If k is a field, then we have

$$\mathrm{grdim}_k(M \otimes N) = \mathrm{grdim}_k(M)\mathrm{grdim}_k(N) \,.$$

- Shift: if M is a graded module and m is an integer, then the graded module $M[m]$ is defined by the condition $M[m]_n := M_{m+n}$. If k is a field, then we have

$$\mathrm{grdim}_k(M[m]) = q^{-m}\mathrm{grdim}_k(M) \,.$$

Example 2.22. Let k be a field.

- If t is transcendental over k and of degree d, then we have $\mathrm{grdim}_k(k[t]) = 1/(1 - q^d)$.
- More generally, if $t_1, t_2, \ldots, t_r$ are algebraically independent elements over k of degree $d_1, d_2, \ldots, d_r$ respectively, then we have $k[t_1, t_2, \ldots, t_r] \simeq k[t_1] \otimes k[t_2] \otimes \cdots \otimes k[t_r]$ and

$$\mathrm{grdim}_k(k[t_1, t_2, \ldots, t_r]) = \frac{1}{(1 - q^{d_1})(1 - q^{d_2}) \cdots (1 - q^{d_r})} \,.$$

- If M has dimension 1 and is generated by an element of degree d, then we have $M \simeq k[-d]$, and $\mathrm{grdim}_k(M) = q^d$.
- If V is a vector space of finite dimension r, then the symmetric algebra $S(V)$ and the exterior algebra $\Lambda(V)$ of V are naturally endowed with structures of graded vector spaces, and we have

$$\mathrm{grdim}_k(S(V)) = \frac{1}{(1-q)^r} \quad \text{and} \quad \mathrm{grdim}_k(\Lambda(V)) = (1+q)^r .$$

A linear map $f : M \to N$ between two graded vector spaces is said to be of degree m if, for all n, we have $f(M_n) \subset N_{n+m}$. Thus, a map of degree m defines a homomorphism from M to $N[m]$.

Suppose then that

$$0 \to M' \xrightarrow{\alpha} M \xrightarrow{\beta} M'' \to 0$$

is an exact sequence of k–vector spaces, where M', M and M'' are graded, and where α and β are maps of degree a and b respectively. We then have an exact sequence of graded vector spaces

$$0 \to M' \xrightarrow{\alpha} M[a] \xrightarrow{\beta} M''[a+b] \to 0 ,$$

whence the formula

$$\mathrm{grdim}_k(M'') - q^b \mathrm{grdim}_k(M) + q^{a+b} \mathrm{grdim}_k(M') = 0 .$$

2.3.3 Koszul Complex

Let V be a vector space of dimension r. Let $S := S(V)$ and $\Lambda := \Lambda(V)$. The Koszul complex is the complex

$$\begin{array}{ccccccccc} 0 \to S \otimes \Lambda^r & \xrightarrow{\delta_r} & S \otimes \Lambda^{r-1} & \xrightarrow{\delta_{r-1}} & \cdots & \xrightarrow{\delta_1} & S \otimes \Lambda^0 \\ & & & & & & \downarrow \\ & & & & & & k \\ & & & & & & \downarrow \\ & & & & & & 0 \end{array}$$

where the homomorphism $S \otimes \Lambda^0 \to k$ is the homomorphism defined by $v \mapsto 0$ for all $v \in V$, and where the homomorphism δ_j is defined in the following way:

$$\delta_j(y \otimes (x_1 \wedge \cdots \wedge x_j)) = \sum_i (-1)^{i+1} y x_i \otimes (x_1 \wedge \cdots \wedge \widehat{x_i} \wedge \cdots \wedge x_j) .$$

If we endow $S \otimes \Lambda^j$ with the graduation of S, the homomorphism δ_j has thus degree 1, and the homomorphism $S \otimes \Lambda^0 \to k$ has degree 0.

One can prove (see for example [Ben], lemma 4.2.1) that the Koszul complex is exact. It follows that

$$1 = \sum_{j=0}^{j=r} (-1)^j q^j \dim(\Lambda^j) \mathrm{grdim}_k(S)\,,$$

or, equivalently,

$$1 = \mathrm{grdim}_k(\Lambda)(-q)\mathrm{grdim}_k(S)(q)\,.$$

2.3.4 Graded Algebras and Modules

Let k be a (noetherian) ring. We call graded k–algebra any finitely generated algebra over k of the form $A = \bigoplus_{n=0}^{\infty} A_n$, with $A_0 = k$, and $A_n A_m \subset A_{n+m}$ for any integers n and m. We then write $\mathfrak{M}$ for the maximal ideal of A defined by $\mathfrak{M} := \bigoplus_{n=1}^{\infty} A_n$.

A graded A–module M is then a (finitely generated) A–module of the form $M = \bigoplus_{n=-\infty}^{n=\infty} M_n$ where $A_n M_m \subset M_{n+m}$ for all n and m, and where M_n is zero if $n < N$ for some integer N.

Each homogeneous component M_n is a finitely generated k–module.

Indeed, A is a noetherian ring, and we have $M_n \simeq \bigoplus_{m \geq n} M_m / \bigoplus_{m>n} M_m$, which proves that M_n is finitely generated over $A/\mathfrak{M}$.

A graded A–module homomorphism is an A–module homomorphism which is a graded k–module homomorphism.

A submodule N of a graded A–module is an A–submodule such that the natural injection is a graded k–module homomorphism, *i.e.*, such that $N = \bigoplus_n (N \cap M_n)$.

A graded (or "homogeneous") ideal of A is a graded submodule of A, seen as graded module over itself. If $\mathfrak{a}$ is an ideal of A, then the following conditions are equivalent:

(i) $\mathfrak{a}$ is a graded ideal,
(ii) $\mathfrak{a} = \bigoplus_n (\mathfrak{a} \cap A_n)$,
(iii) for all $a \in \mathfrak{a}$, each homogeneous component of a belongs to $\mathfrak{a}$,
(iv) $\mathfrak{a}$ is generated by homogeneous elements.

2.3.5 The Hilbert–Serre Theorem

Theorem 2.23. *Let k be a field. Let $A = k[x_1, x_2, \ldots, x_r]$ be a graded k–algebra, generated by homogeneous elements of degree $d_1, d_2, \ldots, d_r$*

respectively. Let M be a graded A–module. Then there exists $P(q) \in \mathbb{Z}[q, q^{-1}]$ such that the graded dimension of M over k is

$$\operatorname{grdim}_k(M) = \frac{P(q)}{(1-q^{d_1})(1-q^{d_2})\cdots(1-q^{d_r})}\,.$$

Proof (of 2.23). We use induction on r. The theorem is obvious if $r = 0$, so we suppose that $r > 0$. Let M' and M'' be the kernel and cokernel of multiplication by x_r respectively. We thus have the following exact sequence of graded A–modules:

$$0 \to M' \to M \xrightarrow{x_r} M[d_r] \to M''[d_r] \to 0\,,$$

whence the equality

$$q^{d_r}\operatorname{grdim}_k(M') - q^{d_r}\operatorname{grdim}_k(M) + \operatorname{grdim}_k(M) - \operatorname{grdim}_k(M'') = 0\,.$$

Now M' and M'' are both graded modules over $k[x_1, \dots, x_{r-1}]$, so that, by the induction hypothesis, there exist $P'(q), P''(q) \in \mathbb{Z}[q, q^{-1}]$ such that

$$\operatorname{grdim}_k(M') = \frac{P'(q)}{(1-q^{d_1})(1-q^{d_2})\cdots(1-q^{d_{r-1}})}$$

and

$$\operatorname{grdim}_k(M'') = \frac{P''(q)}{(1-q^{d_1})(1-q^{d_2})\cdots(1-q^{d_{r-1}})}\,.$$

The theorem follows immediately.

2.3.6 Nakayama's Lemma

Let k be a (commutative) field, and let A a graded k-algebra.

Convention

We make the convention that

- "ideal of A" means "graded ideal of A",
- "element of A" means "homogeneous element of A".

It can be shown that the *"graded Krull dimension"* of A, (*i.e.*, the maximal length of chains of (graded) prime ideals of A) coincides with its "abstract" Krull dimension (*i.e.*, the maximal length of chains of any prime ideals of A).

Nakayama's Lemma

With the above conventions, Nakayama's lemma takes the following form.

Lemma 2.24. *Let A be a graded k–algebra, with maximal ideal $\mathfrak{M}$, and let M be an A–module. If $\mathfrak{M}M = M$, then $M = 0$.*

Proof (of 2.24). Indeed, then we know that there exists $a \in \mathfrak{M}$ such that $(1-a)M = 0$. If $M \neq 0$, then let m be a non-zero (homogeneous) element of M. The equality $m = am$ yields a contradiction.

Lemma 2.25.

(S1) If M' is a submodule of the A–module M, then $M' = M$ if and only if $M = M' + \mathfrak{M}M$.
(S2) If $f : M \to N$ is an A–module homomorphism which induces a surjection from M onto $N/\mathfrak{M}N$, then f is surjective.
(S3) A system $(x_1, x_2, \ldots, x_s)$ of elements of M is a generating system for M if and only if its image in $M/\mathfrak{M}M$ is a generating system of the k–vector space $M/\mathfrak{M}M$. In particular, all the minimal generating systems have the same order, which is the dimension of $M/\mathfrak{M}M$ over k.

Proof (of 2.25). For (S1), we apply 2.24 to the module M/M'.
For (S2), we apply (S1) to the module N and the submodule $f(M)$.
For (S3), we apply $(S2)$ to the module $F := \bigoplus_j A[-\deg(x_j)]$ and the homomorphism $F \to M$ defined by the system we consider.

If M is an A–module, we write $r(M)$ and call *rank of M* the dimension of $M/\mathfrak{M}M$ over k.

Proposition 2.26. *Let R be a graded algebra, with maximal graded ideal $\mathfrak{M}$. Let $(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_n)$ be a family of homogeneous elements of R with positive degrees.*

1. *The following assertions are equivalent:*
   (i) $R = k[u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_n]$,
   (ii) $\mathfrak{M} = Ru_1 + Ru_2 + \cdots + Ru_n$,
   (iii) $\mathfrak{M}/\mathfrak{M}^2 = ku_1 + ku_2 + \cdots + ku_n$.
2. *Assume moreover that R is a graded polynomial algebra with Krull dimension r. Then the following assertions are equivalent:*
   (i) $n = r$, $(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r)$ are algebraically independent, and $R = k[u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r]$,
   (ii) $(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_n)$ is a minimal set of generators of the R–module $\mathfrak{M}$,
   (iii) $(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_n)$ is a basis of the k–vector space $\mathfrak{M}/\mathfrak{M}^2$.

Proof (of 2.26).

(1) The implications (i)⇒(ii)⇒(iii) are clear. The implication (iii)⇒(ii) is a direct application of Nakayama's lemma to the R–module $\mathfrak{M}$. Finally if (ii) holds, the image of $k[u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_n]$ mudulo $\mathfrak{M}$ is k, hence $k[u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_n] = R$ again by Nakayama's lemma.

(2) The equivalence between (ii) and (iii) follows from Nakayama's lemma. If (i) holds, then $(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_n)$ generates $\mathfrak{M}$ by (1), and if it contains a proper system of generators of R, say $(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_m)$ $(m < r)$ then again by (1) we have $R = k[u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_m]$, a contradiction with the hypothesis about the Krull dimension of R.

Assume (iii) holds. Since R is a polynomial algebra with Krull dimension r, and since (i)⇒(iii), we see that the dimension of $\mathfrak{M}/\mathfrak{M}^2$ is r. Hence $n = r$, and since $R = k[u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r]$ (by (1)), we see that $(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r)$ is algebraically independent (otherwise the Krull dimension of R would be less than r).

Lemma 2.27. *Let A be a graded k–algebra, and let M be a finitely generated projective A–module. Then M is free.*

Proof (of 2.27). Let $\mathfrak{M} := \sum_{n \geq 1} A_n$ be the unique maximal ideal of A. Then $M/\mathfrak{M}M$ is a (left) finite dimensional vector space over the field k. Let d denote its dimension. The isomorphism $k^d = (A/\mathfrak{M})^d \xrightarrow{\sim} M/\mathfrak{M}M$ can be lifted (by projectivity of A^d) to a morphism $A^d \to M$, which is onto by Nakayama's lemma. Since M is projective, we get a split short exact sequence

$$0 \to M' \to A^d \to M \to 0 \, .$$

Note that M' is then a direct summand of A^d, hence is also finitely generated. Tensoring with $k = A/\mathfrak{M}A$, this exact sequence gives (since it is split) the short exact sequence

$$0 \to M'/fMM' \to k^d \to M/\mathfrak{M}M \to 0 \, ,$$

which shows that $M'/\mathfrak{M}M' = 0$, hence again by Nakayama's lemma $M' = 0$. Thus we get that M is isomorphic to A^d.

2.4 Polynomial Algebras and Parameters Subalgebras

2.4.1 Degrees and Jacobian

Let $S = k[v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_r]$ be a polynomial graded algebra over the field k, where $(v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_r)$ is a family of algebraically independent, homogeneous elements, with degrees respectively $e_1, e_2, \ldots, e_r$. Assume $e_1 \leq e_2 \leq \cdots \leq e_r$.

Let $(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r)$ be a family of homogeneous elements with degrees $d_2, d_2, \ldots, d_r$ such that $d_1 \leq d_2 \leq \cdots \leq d_r$.

Lemma 2.28. *Assume that $(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r)$ is algebraically free.*

1. *For all i $(1 \leq i \leq r)$, we have $e_i \leq d_i$.*
2. *We have $e_i = d_i$ for all i $(1 \leq i \leq r)$ if and only if $S = k[u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r]$.*

Proof (of 2.28).

(1) Let i such that $1 \leq i \leq r$. The family $(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_i)$ is algebraically free, hence it cannot be contained in $k[v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_{i-1}]$. Hence there exist $j \geq i$ and $l \leq i$ such that v_j does appear in u_l. It follows that $e_j \leq u_l$, hence $e_i \leq e_j \leq d_l \leq d_i$.

(2) We know that $\mathrm{grdim} R = (\prod_{i=1}^{i=r}(1 - q^{e_i}))^{-1}$. Thus it suffices to prove that $\prod_{i=1}^{i=r}(1 - q^{e_i}) = \prod_{i=1}^{i=r}(1 - q^{d_i})$ if and only if $e_i = d_i$ for all i $(1 \leq i \leq r)$, which is left as an exercise.

By 2.28, we see in particular that the family $(e_1, e_2, \ldots, e_r)$ (with $e_1 \leq e_2 \leq \cdots \leq e_r$) is uniquely determined by R. Such a family is called *the family of degrees* of R.

Let us now examine the algebraic independance of the $(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r)$.

Definition 2.29. *The Jacobian of $(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r)$ relative to $(v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_r)$ is the homogeneous element of degree $\sum_i (d_i - e_i)$ defined by*

$$\mathrm{Jac}((u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r)/(v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_r)) := \det(\frac{\partial u_i}{\partial v_j})_{i,j} \,.$$

Proposition 2.30.

1. $\mathrm{Jac}((u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r)/(v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_r))$ *is a homogeneous element of S with degree $\sum_i (d_i - e_i)$.*
2. *The family $(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r)$ is algebraically free if and only if*

$$\mathrm{Jac}((u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r)/(v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_r)) \neq 0 \,.$$

3. *We have $k[u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r] = k[v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_r]$ if and only if*

$$\mathrm{Jac}((u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r)/(v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_r)) \in k^\times \,.$$

Proof (of 2.30).

(1) is trivial.

Proof of (2).

(a) Assume that $(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r)$ is algebraically dependant.

Let $P(t_1, t_2, \ldots, t_r) \in k[t_1, t_2, \ldots, t_r]$ be a minimal degree polynomial subject to the condition $P(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r) = 0$. Let us differentiate that equality relatively to v_j:

$$\sum_i \frac{\partial P}{\partial t_i}(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r) \frac{\partial u_i}{\partial v_j} = 0\,.$$

There is i such that $\dfrac{\partial P}{\partial t_i} \neq 0$, and by minimality of P we have $\dfrac{\partial P}{\partial t_i}(u_1, \ldots, u_r) \neq 0$, which shows that the matrix $(\dfrac{\partial u_i}{\partial v_j})_{i,j}$ is singular and so that

$$\mathrm{Jac}((u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r)/(v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_r)) \;=\; 0\,.$$

(b) Assume that $(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r)$ is algebraically free.

For each i, let us denote by $P_i(t_0, t_1, \ldots, t_r) \in k[t_0, t_1, \ldots, t_r]$ a polynomial with minimal degree such that $P_i(v_i, u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r) = 0$. Let us differentiate that equality relatively to v_j:

$$\frac{\partial P_i}{\partial t_0}(v_i, u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r) + \sum_l \frac{\partial P_i}{\partial t_l}(v_i, u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r) \frac{\partial u_l}{\partial v_j} = 0\,,$$

which can be rewritten as an identity between matrices:

$$(\frac{\partial P_i}{\partial t_l}(v_i, u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r))_{i,l} \cdot (\frac{\partial u_l}{\partial v_j})_{l,j} = -D(\frac{\partial P_i}{\partial t_0}(v_i, u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r)_i)\,,$$

where $D((\lambda_i)_i)$ denotes the diagonal matrix with spectrum $(\lambda_i)_i$.

Since, for all i, we have $\dfrac{\partial P_i}{\partial t_0}(v_i, u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r) \neq 0$ (by minimality of P_i), we see that the matrix $(\dfrac{\partial u_l}{\partial v_j})_{l,j}$ is nonsingular.

(3) follows from 2.28 and from (1).

2.4.2 Systems of Parameters

Let A be a finitely generated graded k–algebra.

Definition 2.31. *A system of parameters of A is a family $(x_1, x_2, \ldots, x_r)$ of homogeneous elements in A such that*

(P1) $(x_1, x_2, \ldots, x_r)$ is algebraically free,
(P2) A is a finitely generated $k[x_1, x_2, \ldots, x_r]$–module.

We ask the reader to believe, to prove, or to check in the appropriate literature the following fundamental result.

Theorem 2.32.

1. *There exists a system of parameters.*
2. *All systems of parameters have the same cardinal, equal to* $\mathrm{Krdim}(A)$.
3. *If* $(x_1, x_2, \ldots, x_m)$ *is a system of homogeneous elements of* A *such that* $m \leq \mathrm{Krdim}(A)$ *and if* A *is finitely generated as a* $k[x_1, x_2, \ldots, x_m]$*–module, then* $m = \mathrm{Krdim}(A)$ *and* $(x_1, x_2, \ldots, x_m)$ *is a system of parameters of* A.
4. *The following assertions are equivalent.*

   (i) *There is a system of parameters* $(x_1, x_2, \ldots, x_r)$ *of* A *such that* A *is a free module over* $k[x_1, x_2, \ldots, x_r]$.
   (ii) *Whenever* $(x_1, x_2, \ldots, x_r)$ *is a system of parameters of* A, A *is a free module over* $k[x_1, x_2, \ldots, x_r]$.

   In that case we say that A *is a Cohen-Macaulay algebra.*

We shall now give some characterizations or systems of parameters of a polynomial algebra.

In what follows, we denote by

- k an algebraically closed field,
- $S = k[v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_r]$ a polynomial algebra, where $(v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_r)$ is a family of homogeneous algebraically independent elements with degrees $(e_1, e_2, \ldots, e_r)$,
- $(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r)$ is a family of nonconstant homogeneous elements of S with degrees respectively $(d_1, d_2, \ldots, d_r)$
- $R := k[u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r]$, and $\mathfrak{M}$ the maximal graded ideal of R.

Proposition 2.33.

1. *The following assertions are equivalent.*

   (i) $(x = 0)$ *is the unique solution in* k^r *of the system*

$$u_1(x) = u_2(x) = \cdots = u_r(x) = 0\,.$$

   (ii) $S/\mathfrak{M}S$ *is a finite dimensional* k*–vector space.*
   (iii) S *is a finitely generated* R*–module.*
   (iv) $(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r)$ *is a system of parameters of* S.

2. *If the preceding conditions hold, then*
3. S *is a free* R*–module, and its rank is* $\dfrac{\prod_i d_i}{\prod_i e_i}$.
4. *The map*

$$\begin{cases} k^r \longrightarrow k^r \\ x \mapsto (u_1(x), u_2(x), \ldots, u_r(x)) \end{cases}$$

   is onto.

Proof (of 2.33). Let us prove (1).

- (i)⇒(ii). Since $S/\mathfrak{M}S$ is a finitely generated k–algebra, it suffices to prove that $S/\mathfrak{M}S$ is algebraic over k. Since the set $\mathcal{V}(\mathfrak{M}S)$ of zeros of $\mathfrak{M}S$ reduces to $\{0\}$ by assumption, and since all the indeterminates v_i vanish on that set, it follows from the strong Nullstellensatz that for all i there is an integer $n_i \geq 1$ such that $v_i^{n_i} \in \mathfrak{M}S$, hence $v_i^{n_i} = 0$ in $S/\mathfrak{M}S$, proving that $S/\mathfrak{M}S$ is indeed an algebraic extension of k.
- (ii)⇒(iii) results from Nakayama lemma.
- (iii)⇒(iv) results from the general properties of systems of parameters (see 2.32, (3)).
- (iv)⇒(i). Let $\mathcal{V}(\mathfrak{M}S)$ be the set of zeros of $\mathfrak{M}S$. In order to prove that $\mathcal{V}(\mathfrak{M}S) = \{0\}$, it suffices to prove that $\mathcal{V}(\mathfrak{M}S)$ is finite. Indeed, if it contains a nonzero element x, it contains λx for all $\lambda \in k$.

Let us prove that $|\mathcal{V}(\mathfrak{M}S)| \leq \dim(S/\mathfrak{M}S)$. Let $x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n \in \mathcal{V}(\mathfrak{M}S)$ be pairwise distinct. Consider the map

$$\begin{cases} S \longrightarrow k^n \\ u \mapsto (u(x_1), u(x_2), \dots, u(x_n)) \end{cases}$$

That map factorizes through $S/\mathfrak{M}S$. But the interpolation theorem shows that it is onto, which proves that $n \leq \dim(S/\mathfrak{M}S)$.

Remark 2.34 (The interpolation theorem). Let V be a k–vector space with dimension r, and let S be its symmetric algebra, isomorphic to the algebra polynomial in r indeterminates. Let $x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n$ be pairwise distinct elements of V. Then the map

$$\begin{cases} S \longrightarrow k^n \\ u \mapsto (u(x_1), u(x_2), \dots, u(x_n)) \end{cases}$$

is onto.

Indeed, for each pair (i,j) with $i \neq j$, let us choose a linear form $t_{i,j} : V \to k$ such that $t_{i,j}(x_i) \neq t_{i,j}(x_j)$. Then the polynomial function u_i on V defined by

$$u_i(v) := \prod_{i \neq j} \frac{t_{i,j}(v) - t_{i,j}(x_j)}{t_{i,j}(x_i) - t_{i,j}(x_j)}$$

satisfies $u_i(x_j) = \delta_{i,j}$.

Let us prove (2)

(a) Since S is free over itself, it is Cohen-Macaulay (see 2.32, (4), hence is free over R. Thus we have

$$S \simeq R \otimes_k (S/\mathfrak{M}S)\,, \text{ which implies } \operatorname{grdim}(S) = \operatorname{grdim}(R)\operatorname{grdim}(S/\mathfrak{M}S)\,.$$

It follows that

$$\mathrm{grdim}(S/\mathfrak{M}S) = \frac{\prod_i (1 + q + \cdots + q^{d_i - 1})}{\prod_i (1 + q + \cdots + q^{e_i - 1})}$$

hence

$$\dim(S/\mathfrak{M}S) = \mathrm{grdim}(S/\mathfrak{M}S)_{q=1} = \frac{\prod_i d_i}{\prod_i e_i}\,.$$

(b) Let $\underline{\lambda} = (\lambda_1, \lambda_2, \ldots, \lambda_r) \in k^r$. We are looking for $\underline{\mu} = (\mu_1, \mu_2, \ldots, \mu_r) \in k^r$ such that, for all i $(1 \le i \le r)$, we have $u_i(\underline{\mu}) = \lambda_i$.

Consider the maximal ideal $\mathfrak{M}_{\underline{\lambda}}$ of R defined by $\underline{\lambda}$, *i.e.*, the kernel of the morphism

$$\varphi_{\underline{\lambda}} : \begin{cases} R = k[u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r] \longrightarrow k \\ u_i \mapsto \lambda_i\,. \end{cases}$$

By Cohen-Seidenberg theorem, there is a maximal ideal $\mathfrak{N}$ of S such that $\mathfrak{N} \cap R = \mathfrak{M}_{\underline{\lambda}}$. By Nullstellensatz, there is $\underline{\mu} = (\mu_1, \mu_2, \ldots, \mu_r) \in k^r$ such that $\mathfrak{N} = \mathfrak{N}_{\underline{\mu}}$, *i.e.*,$\mathfrak{N}$ is the kernel of the morphism

$$\psi_{\underline{\mu}} : \begin{cases} S = k[v_1, v_1, \ldots, v_r] \longrightarrow k \\ v_i \mapsto \mu_i\,. \end{cases}$$

which, restricted to R, is $\varphi_{\underline{\lambda}}$. Thus for all i we have $u_i(\underline{\mu}) = \lambda_i$.

2.4.3 The Chevalley Theorem

Theorem 2.35. *Let S a polynomial algebra: there exist a system $(v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_r)$ of homogeneous algebraically independent elements such that $S = k[v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_r]$. Let R be a graded subalgebra of S such that S is a finitely generated R–module.*

The following assertions are equivalent ;

(i) S is a free R–module,

(ii) R is a polynomial algebra : whenever $(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_n)$ is a system of homogeneous elements of R which is a generating system for the maximal graded ideal $\mathfrak{M}$ of R, and such that n is minimal for that property, then $n = r$, $R = k[u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r]$, and $(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_n)$ is algebraically independent.

Proof (of 2.35). The implication (ii)⇒(i) results from the fact that S is Cohen–Macaulay (see 2.32).

Remark 2.36. The implication (i)⇒(ii) has a natural homological proof (see for example [Se2]): in order to prove that R is a regular graded algebra, it suffices to prove that it has finite global dimension, which results easily from the same property for S and from the fact that S is free over R. We provide below a selfcontained and elementary proof, largely inspired by [Bou1], chap. V, §5, Lemme 1.

Let $(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_n)$ be a system of homogeneous elements of R which is a generating system for the maximal graded ideal $\mathfrak{M}$ of R, and assume that n is minimal for that property. It is clear that R is generated by $(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_n)$ as a k–algebra. We shall prove that $(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_n)$ is algebraically independent (from which it results that $n = r$).

Assume not. Let $k[t_1, t_2, \ldots, t_n]$ be the polynomial algebra in n indeterminates, graduated by $\deg t_i := \deg u_i$. Let $P(t_1, t_2, \ldots, t_m) \in k[t_1, t_2, \ldots, t_m]$ be a homogeneous polynomial with minimal degree such that

$$P(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_n) = 0\,.$$

Let us set $\delta_i := \dfrac{\partial P}{\partial t_i}(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_n)$ and let us denote by $\delta\mathfrak{M}$ the (graded) ideal of R generated by $(\delta_1, \delta_2, \ldots, \delta_n)$.

Choose $I \subseteq \{1, 2, \ldots, n\}$ minimal such that $\delta\mathfrak{M}$ is generated by the family $(\delta_i)_{i \in I}$. So we have

$$(\forall j \notin I) \;\; \delta_j = \sum_{i \in I} a_{i,j}\delta_i \quad \text{with } a_{i,j} \in R\,.$$

Since we have for all l

$$0 = \frac{\partial P}{\partial v_l}(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_n) = \sum_{i=1}^{i=n} \delta_i \frac{\partial u_i}{\partial v_l}(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_n)\,,$$

replacing δ_j (for $j \notin I$) by its value we get

$$\sum_{i \in I} \delta_i \left(\frac{\partial u_i}{\partial v_l} + \sum_{j \notin I} a_{i,j} \frac{\partial u_j}{\partial v_l} \right) = 0 \qquad (*)$$

Let us set $x_{i,l} := \dfrac{\partial u_i}{\partial v_l} + \sum_{j \in I} a_{i,j} \dfrac{\partial u_j}{\partial v_l}$ so that the relation (*) becomes

$$\sum_{i \in I} x_{i,l}\, \delta_i = 0\,. \qquad (*)$$

- We shall prove that $x_{i,l} \in \mathfrak{M}S$.

For that purpose, let us remember the hypothesis by introducing a basis $(e_\alpha)_\alpha$ of S as an R–module. We have

$$x_{i,l} = \sum_{\alpha} \lambda_{i,l;\alpha}\, e_\alpha$$

with $\lambda_{i,l;\alpha} \in R$. We want to prove that, for all i, j, α, we have $\lambda_{i,l;\alpha} \in \mathfrak{M}$.

The relation (*) implies that, for all l and α,

$$\sum_{i \in I} \lambda_{i,l;\alpha}\, \delta_i = 0\,.$$

Assume that for some i_0, l_0, α_0, we have $\lambda_{0 i,l_0;\alpha_0} \notin \mathfrak{M}$. Let us then consider the projection of the above equality onto the space of elements with degree $\deg \delta_{i_0}$. We get a relation

$$\sum_{i \in I} \lambda'_{i,l_0;\alpha_0}\, \delta_i = 0 \text{ where } \lambda'_{i_0,l_0;\alpha_0} \in k^\times\,,$$

i.e., an expression of δ_{i_0} as linear combination of the δ_i ($i \neq i_0$), a contradiction with the minimality of I.

- Let us multiply by v_l both sides of the equality $x_{i,l} := \dfrac{\partial u_i}{\partial v_l} + \sum_{j \in I} a_{i,j} \dfrac{\partial u_j}{\partial v_l}$ which defines $x_{i,l}$, and then sum up over $l = 1, 2, \ldots, r$. By the Euler relation, we get (for $i \in I$)

$$\deg(u_i) u_i + \sum_{j \notin I} a_{i,j} \deg(u_j) u_j = \sum_{l} x_{i,l} v_l\,.$$

Since $x_{i,l} \in \mathfrak{M}S$, the above equality shows that (for $i \in I$)

$$\deg(u_i) u_i + \sum_{j \notin I} a_{i,j} \deg(u_j) u_j = \sum_{l} x_l u_l$$

where, for all l, x_l is a positive degree (homogeneous) element of S. Projecting onto the space of elements with degree $\deg(u_i)$, we get that, for all $i \in I$, u_i is a linear combination (with coefficients in S) of the u_j ($j \neq i$).

- Since S is free as an R–module, it results from Nakayama's lemma that any system of elements of S which defines a k–basis of $R/\mathfrak{M}R$ is also an R–basis of S. In particular there exists a basis of S over R which contains 1, and so there is an R–linear projection $\pi : S \twoheadrightarrow R$.

Now if $u_i = \sum_{l \neq i} y_l u_l$ with $y_l \in S$, by applying π to that equality we get $u_i = \sum_{l \neq i} \pi(y_l) u_l$, an R–linear dependance relation on the set of $(u_l)_{1 \leq l \leq n}$, a contradiction with the minimality of n.

Chapter 3
Polynomial Invariants of Finite Linear Groups

3.1 Finite Groups Invariants

3.1.1 Generalities

Let B be an integral domain, with field of fractions L. Let G be a finite group of automorphisms of B. We set $A := B^G$, the subring of G–fixed points of B, and we denote by K its field of fractions.

$$\begin{tikzcd} & L \arrow[dd, dash] \\ B \arrow[ur, hook] \arrow[dd, dash] & \\ & K \\ A \arrow[ur, hook] & \end{tikzcd}$$

Proposition 3.1.

1. *B is integral over A.*
2. *Any element of L can be written $\dfrac{b}{a}$ with $a \in A$ and $b \in B$. We have $K = L^G$ and L/K is a Galois extension, with G as Galois group.*
3. *If B is integrally closed, A is also integrally closed.*

Proof (of 3.1).

(1) Every $b \in B$ is a root of the polynomial $P_b(t) := \prod_{g\in G}(t - g(b))$.
(2) For $b_1, b_2 \in B$ and $b_2 \neq 0$, we have

$$\frac{b_1}{b_2} = \frac{b_1 \prod_{g\in G, g\neq 1} g(b_2)}{\prod_{g\in G} g(b_2)}\,.$$

(3) An element of K which is integral over A is *a fortiori* integral over B, whence it belongs to B and so to $B \cap K$. But $B \cap K = B \cap L^G = B^G = A$.

From now on we assume that B is integrally closed; hence A is also *integrally closed*.

M. Broué, *Introduction to Complex Reflection Groups and Their Braid Groups*, Lecture Notes in Mathematics 1988, 35
DOI 10.1007/978-3-642-11175-4_3, © Springer-Verlag Berlin Heidelberg 2010

Let us recall the Cohen–Seidenberg theorems in that context (see for example [Bou2], §2, 2). We recall that the map

$$\mathrm{Spec}(B) \to \mathrm{Spec}(A) \ \text{ is defined by } \ \mathfrak{q} \mapsto A \cap \mathfrak{q}\,.$$

If $\mathfrak{p} = \mathfrak{q} \cap A$ we say that $\mathfrak{q}$ is above $\mathfrak{p}$.

Theorem 3.2.

1. *The map* $\mathrm{Spec}(B) \to \mathrm{Spec}(A)$ *is onto. Moreover*

   (a) If $\mathfrak{q}, \mathfrak{q}' \in \mathrm{Spec}(B)$ *are both above* $\mathfrak{p}$*, then* $\mathfrak{q} \subseteq \mathfrak{q}'$ *implies* $\mathfrak{q} = \mathfrak{q}'$*.*

   (b) Given $\mathfrak{p} \subseteq \mathfrak{p}'$ *in* $\mathrm{Spec}(A)$ *and* $\mathfrak{q} \in \mathrm{Spec}(B)$ *above* $\mathfrak{p}$ *there exists* $\mathfrak{q}' \in \mathrm{Spec}(B)$ *above* $\mathfrak{p}'$ *such that* $\mathfrak{q} \subset \mathfrak{q}'$*:*

$$\begin{tikzcd}[column sep=small]
 & \mathfrak{q}' \arrow[dd, dash, dashed] \\
\mathfrak{q} \arrow[ur, hook, dashed] \arrow[dd, dash] & \\
 & \mathfrak{p}' \\
\mathfrak{p} \arrow[ur, hook] &
\end{tikzcd}$$

   (c) Given $\mathfrak{p} \subseteq \mathfrak{p}'$ *in* $\mathrm{Spec}(A)$ *and* $\mathfrak{q}' \in \mathrm{Spec}(B)$ *above* $\mathfrak{p}'$ *there exists* $\mathfrak{q} \in \mathrm{Spec}(B)$ *above* $\mathfrak{p}$ *such that* $\mathfrak{q} \subset \mathfrak{q}'$*.*

$$\begin{tikzcd}[column sep=small]
 & \mathfrak{q}' \arrow[dd, dash] \\
\mathfrak{q} \arrow[ur, hook, dashed] \arrow[dd, dash, dashed] & \\
 & \mathfrak{p}' \\
\mathfrak{p} \arrow[ur, hook] &
\end{tikzcd}$$

2. *(Transitivity) Given* $\mathfrak{p} \in \mathrm{Spec}(A)$*, the group* G *acts transitively on the set of* $\mathfrak{q} \in \mathrm{Spec}(B)$ *which are over* $\mathfrak{p}$*.*

Let $\mathfrak{q} \in \mathrm{Spec}(B)$, and let $\mathfrak{p} := A \cap \mathfrak{q}$.

- We call *decomposition group of* $\mathfrak{q}$ and we denote by $G^d(\mathfrak{q})$ (or $N_G(\mathfrak{q})$) the subgroup of G consisting in those $g \in G$ such that $g(\mathfrak{q}) = \mathfrak{q}$.
  Since G acts transitively on the set of prime ideals of B above $\mathfrak{p}$, the number of such ideals is $|G : G^d(\mathfrak{q})|$. We set $\nu_{\mathfrak{p}} := |G : G^d(\mathfrak{q})|$.
- We call *inertia group of* $\mathfrak{q}$ and we denote by $G^i(\mathfrak{q})$ the normal subgroup of $G^d(\mathfrak{q})$ consisting in those $g \in G^d(\mathfrak{q})$ which act trivially on $B/\mathfrak{q}$.
  The group $G^d(\mathfrak{q})/G^i(\mathfrak{q})$ is identified with a subgroup of the group of automorphisms of $B/\mathfrak{q}$ which act trivially on $A/\mathfrak{p}$.

We denote by $k_A(\mathfrak{p}) := A_{\mathfrak{p}}/\mathfrak{p}A_{\mathfrak{p}}$ and $k_B(\mathfrak{q}) := B_{\mathfrak{q}}/\mathfrak{q}B_{\mathfrak{q}}$ the fields of fractions of respectively $A/\mathfrak{p}$ and $B/\mathfrak{q}$. Thus we have

$$G^d(\mathfrak{q})/G^i(\mathfrak{q}) \hookrightarrow \mathrm{Gal}(k_B(\mathfrak{q})/k_A(\mathfrak{p}))\,.$$

The degree $[k_B(\mathfrak{q}) : k_A(\mathfrak{p})]$ depends only on $\mathfrak{p}$, and we set $f_{\mathfrak{p}} := [k_B(\mathfrak{q}) : k_A(\mathfrak{p})]$.

Theorem 3.3.

1. *The field extension* $k_B(\mathfrak{q})/k_A(\mathfrak{p})$ *is normal with Galois group* $G^d(\mathfrak{q})/G^i(\mathfrak{q})$.
2. *The following assertions are equivalent:*
   (i) $G^i(\mathfrak{q}) = 1$.
   (ii) $\mathfrak{p}B_\mathfrak{q} = \mathfrak{q}B_\mathfrak{q}$, *and the extension* $k_B(\mathfrak{q})/k_A(\mathfrak{p})$ *is Galois.*

If the preceding properties hold, we say that the ideal $\mathfrak{p} \in \mathrm{Spec}(A)$ is unramified on B, or that $\mathfrak{q} \in \mathrm{Spec}(B)$ is unramified on A.

3.1.2 Case of Height One Primes

From now on we assume A and B are *normal domains*, *i.e.*, noetherian and integrally closed.

We denote by $\mathrm{Spec}_1(A)$ (resp. $\mathrm{Spec}_1(B)$) the set of height one primes ideals (*i.e.*, minimal nonzero prime ideals) of A (resp. of B). By 3.2, if $\mathfrak{q}$ is above $\mathfrak{p} \in \mathrm{Spec}(B)$, $\mathfrak{q}$ has height one if and only if $\mathfrak{p}$ has height one.

For $\mathfrak{p} \in \mathrm{Spec}_1(A)$, the local ring $A_\mathfrak{p}$ is a normal domain, and it has a unique nonzero prime ideal (which is then maximal) ; hence it is a local Dedekind domain, *i.e.*, a local principal ideal domain (discrete valuation ring).

Similarly, for $\mathfrak{q} \in \mathrm{Spec}_1(B)$, $B_\mathfrak{q}$ is a discrete valuation ring.

We then call *ramification index of* $\mathfrak{p}$ *on* B (or of $\mathfrak{q}$ on A) and we denote by $e_\mathfrak{p}$ the integer defined by the equality $\mathfrak{p}B_\mathfrak{q} = \mathfrak{q}^{e_\mathfrak{p}}B_\mathfrak{q}$.

Proposition 3.4. *Let* $\mathfrak{p} \in \mathrm{Spec}_1(A)$, *and let* $\mathfrak{q} \in \mathrm{Spec}_1(B)$ *lying over* $\mathfrak{p}$. *We have*

1. $|G| = \nu_\mathfrak{p} e_\mathfrak{p} f_\mathfrak{p}$,
2. $|G^d(\mathfrak{q})| = e_\mathfrak{p} f_\mathfrak{p}$,
3. $e_\mathfrak{p}$ *divides* $|G^i(\mathfrak{q})$.

Proof (Sketch of proof of 3.4). Let us first notice that the spectrum of the ring $B_\mathfrak{p}$ consists in $\{0\}$ and the ideals $g(\mathfrak{q})B_\mathfrak{p}$ for $g \in G$. Hence the ring $B_\mathfrak{p}$ is a Dedekind domain, since it is a normal domain whose all non zero prime ideals are maximal.

Now we have
$$\mathfrak{p}B_\mathfrak{p} = \prod_{g \in G/G^d(\mathfrak{q})} g(\mathfrak{q})^{e_\mathfrak{p}} B_\mathfrak{p} ,$$
and by the Chinese Remainder theorem it follows that
$$B_\mathfrak{p}/\mathfrak{p}B_\mathfrak{p} = \prod_{g \in G/G^d(\mathfrak{q})} B_\mathfrak{p}/g(\mathfrak{q})^{e_\mathfrak{p}} B_\mathfrak{p} .$$

Let us denote by $[B_\mathfrak{p}/\mathfrak{p}B_\mathfrak{p} : A_\mathfrak{p}/\mathfrak{p}A_\mathfrak{p}]$ the dimension of $B_\mathfrak{p}/\mathfrak{p}B_\mathfrak{p}$ over the field $k_A(\mathfrak{p}) = A_\mathfrak{p}/\mathfrak{p}A_\mathfrak{p}$. It is not difficult then to establish that

$$[B_\mathfrak{p}/\mathfrak{p}B_\mathfrak{p} : A_\mathfrak{p}/\mathfrak{p}A_\mathfrak{p}] = |G : G^d(\mathfrak{q})| e_\mathfrak{p} f_\mathfrak{p} \,.$$

But since $A_\mathfrak{p}$ is a principal ideal domain, $B_\mathfrak{p}$ is a free $A_\mathfrak{p}$–module, with rank $|G|$ since $[L : K] = |G|$. It implies that $[B_\mathfrak{p}/\mathfrak{p}B_\mathfrak{p} : A_\mathfrak{p}/\mathfrak{p}A_\mathfrak{p}] = |G|$, proving (1) and (2).

Since $G^d(\mathfrak{q})/G^i(\mathfrak{q})$ is a subgroup of $\mathrm{Gal}(k_B(\mathfrak{q})/k_A(\mathfrak{p}))$, we see that $|G^d(\mathfrak{q}) : G^i(\mathfrak{q})|$ divides $f_\mathfrak{q}$, hence that $e_\mathfrak{p}$ divides $|G^i(\mathfrak{q})|$.

3.2 Finite Linear Groups on Symmetric Algebras

In what follows, we let S be the symmetric algebra of an r–dimensional vector space V over the field k. We let $\mathfrak{n}$ be its graded maximal ideal, so that $S/\mathfrak{n} = k$. Let L be the field of fractions of S. Notice that $V = \mathfrak{n}/\mathfrak{n}^2$ (the tangent space).

Let G be a finite group of automorphisms of V.

We denote by $R = S^G$ the subring of fixed points of G on S and we set $\mathfrak{m} := R \cap \mathfrak{n} = \mathfrak{n}^G$ (the maximal graded ideal of R. Let K be the field of fractions of R.

$$\begin{tikzcd}
 & & L \\
\mathfrak{n} \arrow[r, hook] & S \arrow[ur, hook] \arrow[dr, two heads] & K \arrow[u, dash] \\
\mathfrak{m} \arrow[u, dash] \arrow[r, hook] & R \arrow[u, hook] \arrow[ur, hook] \arrow[r, two heads] & k
\end{tikzcd}$$

Lemma 3.5.

1. S is a finitely generated R–module.
2. R is a finitely generated k–algebra.

Proof (of 3.5).

(1) Since S is a k–algebra of finite type, S is *a fortiori* of finite type over R. Since S is integral over R, S is then a finitely generated R–module.

(2) Assume $S = k[x_1, \ldots, x_r]$. Let $P_1(t), \ldots, P_r(t) \in R[t]$ be nonzero polynomials having respectively $x_1, \ldots, x_r$ as roots. Let $C_1, \ldots, C_r$ denote respectively the set of coefficients of $P_1(t), \ldots, P_r(t)$. Thus, S is integral over $k[C_1, \ldots, C_r]$, and since S is a finitely generated algebra over $k[C_1, \ldots, C_r]$, S is a finitely generated module over $k[C_1, C_2, \ldots, C_r]$. Since $k[C_1, \ldots, C_r]$ is noetherian, the submodule R of S is also finitely generated. Hence R, a finitely generated module over a finitely generated k–algebra, is a finitely generated k–algebra.

Assume k algebraically closed.

It results from Nullstellensatz that there is a (GL(V)–equivariant) bijection

$$\mathrm{Spec}^{\max}(S) \stackrel{\sim}{\longleftrightarrow} V \,.$$

Theorem 3.2 implies then that there is a commutative diagram

$$\begin{tikzcd} \mathrm{Spec}^{\max}(S) \arrow[r, "\sim"] \arrow[d] & V \arrow[d] \\ \mathrm{Spec}^{\max}(R) \arrow[r, "\sim"] & V/G \end{tikzcd}$$

From now on, we assume that k *has characteristic* 0.

3.2.1 Ramification and Reflecting Pairs

Let us start by studying certain height one prime ideals.

From now on, we denote by $\mathfrak{q}$ be an ideal of S generated by a degree one element of S (hence $\mathfrak{q} = SL$ where L is a line in V). The ideal $\mathfrak{q}$ is a prime ideal of height one.

Let us denote by $\mathfrak{p}$ its image in Spec(R). Thus $\mathfrak{p} = R \cap \mathfrak{q}$.

Let us denote by Spec($B, \mathfrak{p}$) the set of prime ideals of B lying over $\mathfrak{p}$. We recall that

$$\mathrm{Spec}(B, \mathfrak{p}) = \{g(\mathfrak{q}) \mid (g \in G/G^d(\mathfrak{q}))\} \,.$$

Lemma 3.6. *For such an ideal $\mathfrak{q} = SL$, we have $G^i(\mathfrak{q}) = G(V/L)$.*

Proof (of 3.6). Let us prove that $G(V/L) \subseteq G^i(\mathfrak{q})$. Let $g \in G(V/L)$. Whenever $v \in V$, we have $g(v) - v \in L$. The identity $g(xy) - xy = g(x)(g(y) - y) + (g(x) - x)y$ and an easy induction on the degree of $x \in S$ shows then that $g(x) - x \in SL$ for $x \in S$.

The inverse inclusion is obvious.

The following proposition gives a bijection between the height one prime ideals of S which are ramified over R and the reflecting pairs of G on V (for the notation used here, the reader may refer to 1.19 above).

Proposition 3.7.

1. *The bijection:*

(a) If (L, H) is a reflecting pair for G, then the ideal $\mathfrak{q} = SL$ is a height one prime ideal of S ramified over R.

(b) Reciprocally, if $\mathfrak{q}$ is a height one prime ideal of S, ramified over R, there exists a reflecting pair (L, H) for G such that $\mathfrak{q}$ is the principal ideal of S generated by L.

2. If $\mathfrak{q}$ *and* (L,H) *are associated as above, then*

(a) $G^i(\mathfrak{q}) = G(H, V/L)$*,*
(b) Let $\mathfrak{p} := \mathfrak{q} \cap R$*. Then we have*

$$e_{\mathfrak{p}} = |G(H, V/L)| \;\; \textit{and} \;\; f_{\mathfrak{p}} = |N_G(L,H)/G(H,V/L)| \,.$$

Proof (of 3.7).

(1)(a) Let (L,H) be a reflecting pair of G, and let $\mathfrak{q} := SL$. It is clear that $\mathfrak{q}$ is a prime ideal with height one in S. Since (see 3.6) $G^i(\mathfrak{q}) = G(H, V/L)$ and since $G(H, V/L) \neq \{1\}$, we see that $\mathfrak{q}$ is ramified over R.

(b) Let $\mathfrak{q} \in \mathrm{Spec}_A(B)$, and suppose that $\mathfrak{q}$ is ramified over R, *i.e.*, that $G^i(\mathfrak{q}) \neq \{1\}$: there exists $g \in G$, $g \neq 1$, such that, for all $x \in S$, $g(x) - x \in \mathfrak{q}$.

On the other hand, since the morphism $V \to \mathfrak{n}/\mathfrak{n}^2$ is a G–equivariant isomorphism (hence the morphism $G \to \mathrm{GL}(\mathfrak{n}/\mathfrak{n}^2)$ is injective), there is a homogeneous element $x \in S$ such that $g(x) - x \notin \mathfrak{n}^2$. Such an element x is then of degree 1, *i.e.*, $x \in V$.

Let us denote by L the line generated by $g(x) - x$. Thus $L \subseteq \mathfrak{q}$. Since $\mathfrak{q}$ has height one and since it contains the prime ideal generated by L, we have $\mathfrak{q} = SL$.

(2) Assertion (a) results from 3.6. Since k has characteristic zero, the extension $k_S(\mathfrak{q})/k_R(\mathfrak{p})$ (see 3.3) is not only normal but also Galois. Since its Galois group is

$$G^d(\mathfrak{q})/G^i(\mathfrak{q}) = N_G(L,H)/G(H,V/L) \,,$$

we see that $f_{\mathfrak{p}} = |N_G(L,H)/G(H,V/L)|$. Now since (see 3.4) $|G^d(\mathfrak{q})| = e_{\mathfrak{p}} f_{\mathfrak{p}}$, it follows that $e_{\mathfrak{p}} = |G(H,V/L)|$.

We denote by $\mathrm{Spec}_1^{\mathrm{ram}}(S)$ the set of height one prime ideals of S which are ramified over R, and we denote by $\mathrm{Spec}_1^{\mathrm{ram}}(R)$ the set of height one prime ideals of R ramified in S.

The set $\mathrm{Spec}_1^{\mathrm{ram}}(R)$ is in natural bijection with the set $\mathrm{Spec}_1^{\mathrm{ram}}(S)/G$ of orbits of G on $\mathrm{Spec}_1^{\mathrm{ram}}(S)$.

The set of reflecting pairs is in bijection with the set of reflecting hyperplanes, denoted by $\mathcal{A}$. Thus:

- $\mathrm{Spec}_1^{\mathrm{ram}}(S)$ is in natural bijection with the set $\mathcal{A}$ of reflecting hyperplanes of G,
- $\mathrm{Spec}_1^{\mathrm{ram}}(R)$ is in natural bijection with the set $\mathcal{A}/G$ of orbits of G on its reflecting hyperplanes arrangement.

3.2.2 Linear Characters Associated with Reflecting Hyperplanes

Let $\mathfrak{p} \in \mathrm{Spec}_1^{\mathrm{ram}}(R)$. For $\mathfrak{q} \in \mathrm{Spec}_1^{\mathrm{ram}}(S)$ lying above $\mathfrak{p}$, associated with the reflecting pair (L,H), we denote by $j_{\mathfrak{q}}$ a nonzero element of L. We define $j_{\mathfrak{p}} \in S$ by the formula

$$j_{\mathfrak{p}} := \prod_{\mathfrak{q} \in \mathrm{Spec}(S;\mathfrak{p})} j_{\mathfrak{q}} \,.$$

Notice that $j_{\mathfrak{p}}$ is uniquely defined up to multiplication by a nonzero element of k, and that it is a homogeneous element of S of degree $\nu_{\mathfrak{p}}$.

Moreover, $j_{\mathfrak{p}}$ is an eigenvector for all elements of G, so it defines a linear character of G, denoted by $\theta_{\mathfrak{p}}$: whenever $g \in G$, we have

$$g(j_{\mathfrak{p}}) = \theta_{\mathfrak{p}}(g)\, j_{\mathfrak{p}} \,.$$

Proposition 3.8.

Let $\mathfrak{p} \in \mathrm{Spec}_1^{\mathrm{ram}}(R)$. The linear character $\theta_{\mathfrak{p}}$ takes the following values on a reflection $s \in G$:

$$\theta_{\mathfrak{p}}(s) = \begin{cases} \det_V(s) & \textit{if } s \in G^i(\mathfrak{q}) \textit{ for } \mathfrak{q} \in \mathrm{Spec}(S;\mathfrak{p})\,, \\ 1 & \textit{if } s \in G^i(\mathfrak{q}) \textit{ for } \mathfrak{q} \notin \mathrm{Spec}(S;\mathfrak{p})\,. \end{cases}$$

Proof (of 3.8). Let $s \in G$ be a reflection . We shall prove that

$$s(j_{\mathfrak{p}}) = \begin{cases} \det_V(s) j_{\mathfrak{p}} & \text{if } s \in G^i(\mathfrak{q}) \text{ for } \mathfrak{q} \in \mathrm{Spec}(S;\mathfrak{p})\,, \\ j_{\mathfrak{p}} & \text{if } s \in G^i(\mathfrak{q}) \text{ for } \mathfrak{q} \notin \mathrm{Spec}(S;\mathfrak{p})\,. \end{cases}$$

For $\mathfrak{q} \in \mathrm{Spec}(S;\mathfrak{p})$, let $n_s(\mathfrak{q})$ denote the cardinal of the orbit of $\mathfrak{q}$ under s. Thus (up to multiplication by an element of $k^\times$), we have

$$j_{\mathfrak{p}} = \prod_{\mathfrak{q} \in (\mathrm{Spec}(S;\mathfrak{p})/\langle s \rangle)} (j_{\mathfrak{q}} s(j_{\mathfrak{q}}) \cdots s^{n_s(\mathfrak{q})-1}(j_{\mathfrak{q}}))\,.$$

By definition of $n_s(\mathfrak{q})$, $j_{\mathfrak{q}}$ is an eigenvector of $s^{n_s(\mathfrak{q})}$. Let (L, H) be the reflecting pair of s. We have $s \in G(H)$, hence $s^{n_s(\mathfrak{q})} \in G(H)$.

• Assume that $G(H) \neq G^i(\mathfrak{q})$. Then we know that $\mathfrak{q} \neq SL$, hence $j_{\mathfrak{q}} \notin L$. Nevertheless, $j_{\mathfrak{q}}$ is an eigenvector of $s^{n_s(\mathfrak{q})}$. But, either $s^{n_s(\mathfrak{q})} = 1$, or $s^{n_s(\mathfrak{q})}$ is a reflection with reflecting pair (L, H). Thus, in any case, we see that $j_{\mathfrak{q}}$ is fixed by $s^{n_s(\mathfrak{q})}$. This proves that if $s \in G^i(\mathfrak{q})$ for some $\mathfrak{q} \notin \mathrm{Spec}(S;\mathfrak{p})$, then $s(j_{\mathfrak{p}}) = 1$.

• Assume now $G(H) = G^i(\mathfrak{q})$. Then (L, H) is the reflecting pair associated with $\mathfrak{q}$, and $s \in G^i(\mathfrak{q})$. Hence $s(j_{\mathfrak{p}}) = \det_V(s) j_{\mathfrak{p}}$.

The next theorem is essentially due to Stanley [Sta].

Theorem 3.9.

1. *The restrictions provide a natural morphism*

$$\rho_G : \mathrm{Hom}(G, k^\times) \to \left(\prod_{\mathfrak{q} \in \mathrm{Spec}_1^{\mathrm{ram}}(S)} \mathrm{Hom}(G^i(\mathfrak{q}), k^\times) \right)^G$$
$$= \left(\prod_{H \in \mathcal{A}} \mathrm{Hom}(G(H), k^\times) \right)^G$$

2. *The morphism ρ_G is onto.*

Remark 3.10.
1. The homogeneous element

$$j^{\mathrm{ram}} := \prod_{\mathfrak{p} \in \mathrm{Spec}_1^{\mathrm{ram}}(R)} j_{\mathfrak{p}} \,,$$

a monomial with degree

$$\sum_{\mathfrak{p} \in \mathrm{Spec}_1^{\mathrm{ram}}(R)} \nu_{\mathfrak{p}} = |\mathrm{Spec}_1^{\mathrm{ram}}(S)| = |\mathcal{A}|$$

(the number of reflecting hyperplanes of G), defines the linear character

$$\theta^{\mathrm{ram}} := \prod_{\mathfrak{p} \in \mathrm{Spec}_1^{\mathrm{ram}}(R)} \theta_{\mathfrak{p}}$$

which coincides with the determinant on the subgroup of G generated by reflections.

In general we have $\theta^{\mathrm{ram}} \neq \det_V$.

Indeed, notice that for any $\zeta \in \mu(k)$, one has $\theta^{\mathrm{ram}}(\zeta \mathrm{Id}_V) = \zeta^N$ where N denotes the number of reflecting hyperplanes of G, while $\det_V(\zeta \mathrm{Id}_V) = \zeta^r$.

2. Let $(v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_r)$ be a basis of V, let $(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r)$ be a system of parameters for the algebra R, and let us denote by J the corresponding Jacobian, defined up to a nonzero scalar by

$$J := \det \left(\frac{\partial u_i}{\partial v_j} \right)_{i,j} .$$

Then, for all $g \in G$, we have

$$g(J) = \det_V(g^{-1}) J \,.$$

We shall see below that, if G is generated by reflections, we can express J as a monomial in the $j_H)_{H\in\mathcal{A}}$.

Now we can describe the ideal $\mathfrak{p}$.

Let us set

$$\Delta_{\mathfrak{p}} := j_{\mathfrak{p}}^{e_{\mathfrak{p}}} = \prod_{g\in G/G^d(\mathfrak{q})} g(j_{\mathfrak{q}})^{e_{\mathfrak{p}}} \,.$$

Proposition 3.11.

1. *We have $\mathfrak{p} \subseteq R\Delta_{\mathfrak{p}}$.*
2. *If G is generated by its reflections, we have*

$$\mathfrak{p} = R\Delta_{\mathfrak{p}} \,, \text{ hence } S\mathfrak{p} = \prod_{g\in G/G^d(\mathfrak{q})} Sg(j_{\mathfrak{q}})^{e_{\mathfrak{p}}} \,.$$

Proof (of 3.11).

(1) Let $x \in \mathfrak{p}$. In order to prove that x is divisible by $\Delta_{\mathfrak{p}}$, it suffices to prove that whenever $\mathfrak{q} \in \mathrm{Spec}(B,\mathfrak{p})$, then x is divisible by $j_{\mathfrak{q}}^{e(\mathfrak{q})}$. So let us pick $\mathfrak{q} \in \mathrm{Spec}(B,\mathfrak{p})$, associated with the reflecting pair (L,H). Let us choose a basis $(v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_{r-1})$ of H, so that $(j_{\mathfrak{q}}, v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_{r-1})$ is a basis of V. Then $x = P(j_{\mathfrak{q}}, v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_{r-1})$, where $P(t_0, t_1, \ldots, t_{r-1}) \in k[t_0, t_1, \ldots, t_{r-1}]$. Since $x \in \mathfrak{q} = Sj_{\mathfrak{q}}$, there exists a polynomial $Q(t_0, t_1, \ldots, t_{r-1}) \in k[t_1, \ldots, t_{r-1}]$ such that $P(t_0, t_1, \ldots, t_{r-1}) = t_0 Q(t_0, t_1, \ldots, t_{r-1})$.

Now let s be a generator of the cyclic group $G(H) = G^i(\mathfrak{q})$, and let us denote by ζ_s its determinant, a root of the unity of order $|G(H)| = e_{\mathfrak{p}}$. Since $s(x) = x$, we have

$$\begin{aligned}
&\zeta_s t_0 Q(\zeta_s t_0, t_1, \ldots, t_{r-1}) = t_0 Q(t_0, t_1, \ldots, t_{r-1}) \,, \; \textit{i.e.,} \\
&Q(\zeta_s t_0, t_1, \ldots, t_{r-1}) = \zeta_s^{e_{\mathfrak{p}}-1} Q(t_0, t_1, \ldots, t_{r-1})
\end{aligned}$$

and we apply the following lemma to conclude that $Q(t_0, t_1, \ldots, t_{r-1})$ is divisible by $t_0^{e_{\mathfrak{p}}-1}$, hence that $P(t_0, t_1, \ldots, t_{r-1})$ is divisible by $t_0^{e_{\mathfrak{p}}}$, *i.e.*, x is divisible by $j_{\mathfrak{q}}^{e_{\mathfrak{p}}}$.

Lemma 3.12. *Let A be a commutative domain, let $P(t) \in A[t]$. Assume there exist an integer m and $a \in A$ such that $a^j \neq 1$ for $1 \leq j \leq m-1$, and $P(at) = a^m P(t)$. Then $P(t)$ is divisible by t^m.*

Proof (of 3.12). Set $P(t) = \sum_n b_n t^n$. By hypothesis, we have $\sum_n a^m b_n t^n = \sum_n b_n a^n t^n$, hence for all $n < m$, $b_n = 0$.

(2) It follows from 3.8 that $\Delta_{\mathfrak{p}}$ is invariant by all reflections in G, hence invariant under G if G is generated by reflections.

3.3 Coinvariant Algebra and Harmonic Polynomials

3.3.1 The Coinvariant Algebra

We set

$$S_G := S/\mathfrak{M}S$$

and we call that graded k–algebra the *coinvariant algebra* of G.

The algebra S_G is a finite dimensional k–vector space, whose dimension is the minimal cardinality of a set of generators of S as an R–module (by Nakayama's lemma). Thus there is an integer M such that

$$S_G = k \oplus S_G^1 \oplus \cdots \oplus S_G^M \,,$$

and so in particular $\bigoplus_{n>M} S^n \subseteq \mathfrak{M}S$.

Lemma 3.13. *The set of fixed points of G in S_G is k.*

Proof (of 3.13). It suffices to prove that no homogeneous element of S_G of degree > 0 can be fixed under G. Assume that $x \in S$ is a homogeneous element of S of degree > 0 such that, for all $g \in G$, $g(x) - x \in \mathfrak{M}S$. Then we have $x - (1/|G|) \sum_{g \in G} g(x) \in \mathfrak{M}S$. Since $(1/|G|) \sum_{g \in G} g(x) \in \mathfrak{M}$, we see that $x \in \mathfrak{M}S$.

Whenever T is a graded subspace of S, which is G–stable, the multiplication induces a morphism of graded kG–modules $R \otimes T \longrightarrow S$. By complete reducibility of the action of G on each homogeneous component of S, there exists a G–stable graded subspace T of S such that $\mathfrak{M}S \oplus T = S$. Combined with the isomorphism $S/\mathfrak{M}S \xrightarrow{\sim} T$ which follows from that decomposition, we then get a morphism of graded kG–modules

$$\mu_T : R \otimes S_G \longrightarrow S \,.$$

Lemma 3.14. *The morphism μ_T is onto.*

Proof (of 3.14). It follows from Nakayama's lemma.

Remark 3.15.

- In the next chapter we shall prove that G is generated by reflections if and only if μ_T is an isomorphism.
  Notice that if μ_T is an isomorphism, then S is a free R–module, which implies (by 2.35) that R is a polynomial algebra.
- We shall now define a natural supplement subspace T: the space of harmonic polynomials.

3.3.2 Galois Twisting of a Representation

Generalities

We shall recall how the group $\mathrm{Aut}(k)$ acts on the set of isomorphism types of the k–representations of a finite group G.

Let $\rho : G \to \mathrm{GL}(X)$ be a representation of G over k, and let $\sigma \in \mathrm{Aut}(k)$. We define another k–representation $\sigma\rho$, called *the twisting of* ρ *by* σ, as follows.

Let σX be the k–vector space whose structural abelian group equals X, and where the external multiplication by elements of k is defined by

$$\lambda \cdot x := \sigma^{-1}(\lambda)x \quad \text{for } \lambda \in k \text{ and } x \in X \,.$$

Besides, σ acts as a ring automorphism on the group algebra kG:

$$\sigma : \sum_{g \in G} \lambda_g g \mapsto \sum_{g \in G} \sigma(\lambda_g) g \,.$$

Then the image of the composition map

$$kG \xrightarrow{\sigma^{-1}} kG \xrightarrow{\rho} \mathrm{End}_{\mathbb{Z}}(X)$$

is contained in $\mathrm{End}_k(\sigma X)$ hence defines a k–algebra morphism

$$\sigma\rho : kG \to \mathrm{End}_k(\sigma X)$$

hence a k–representation of G.

Let us choose a basis B of X. Then it is also a basis of σX. It is clear that, for $g \in G$, the matrix of $\sigma\rho(g)$ on B is obtained by applying σ to all entries of the matrix of $\rho(g)$ on B. Thus in particular.

Proposition 3.16.

1. *The characteristic polynomial* $\det(1 - \sigma\rho(g)q)$ *of* $\sigma\rho(g)$ *is the image under* σ *of the characteristic polynomial* $\det(1 - \rho(g)q)$ *of* $\rho(q)$*,*
2. *whenever* $g \in G$*, we have* $\chi_{\sigma\rho}(g) = \sigma(\chi(g))\,.$

We shall denote by $\sigma\chi$ the character of the σ–twisted of a representation with character χ.

It is easy to check that we have canonical isomorphisms

$$\mathrm{Sym}(\sigma X) = \sigma\mathrm{Sym}(X) \;\text{ and }\; \Lambda(\sigma X) = \sigma\Lambda(X)\,,$$

and also that

$$\mathrm{Sym}(\sigma X)^{\sigma\rho(G)} = \sigma\mathrm{Sym}(X)^{\rho(G)}\,.$$

More generally, if χ is an irreducible character of G, there is a natural identification

$$\sigma(\mathrm{Sym}(X)_\chi) = (\sigma\mathrm{Sym}(X))_{\sigma\chi}\,. \tag{3.1}$$

Let us fix a basis $(x_1, x_2, \ldots, x_m)$ of X. Then it is also a basis of σX.

For $\underline{n} = (n_1, n_2, \ldots, n_m) \in \mathbb{N}^m$, we set $\underline{x}^{\underline{n}} := x_1^{n_1} x_2^{n_2} \cdots x_r^{n_r}$. A general element of $\mathrm{Sym}(X)$ has the form $\sum \lambda_{\underline{n}} \underline{x}^{\underline{n}}$, where $\lambda_{\underline{n}} \in k$. Then we have

$$\left(\sum \lambda_{\underline{n}} \underline{x}^{\underline{m}} \in \mathrm{Sym}(X)_\chi\right) \;\Leftrightarrow\; \left(\sum \sigma(\lambda_{\underline{n}}) \underline{x}^{\underline{n}} \in (\sigma\mathrm{Sym}(X))_{\sigma\chi}\right). \tag{3.2}$$

Complex Conjugation and Contragredient Representation

Assume now that $k = \mathbb{C}$, the field of complex numbers. We denote the complex conjugation by $\lambda \mapsto \lambda^*$.

There exists a positive definite hermitian form on X which is G–invariant. Using an orthonormal basis for such a form (as well as its dual basis for the dual space X^*), we see that the matrix of the contragredient of $\rho(g)$ is the complex conjugate of the matrix of $\rho(g)$.

Proposition 3.17. *If $k = \mathbb{C}$, the contragredient representation of a representation ρ, denoted by ρ^*, is the twisting of ρ by the complex conjugation.*

Case of Reflection Groups

For the particular case of reflection groups, we have the following result.

Lemma 3.18. *The group $\rho(G)$ is generated by reflections if and only if $\sigma\rho(G)$ is generated by reflections.*

3.3.3 Differential Operators, Harmonic Polynomials

Generalities

We denote by S^* the symmetric algebra of the dual space V^*.

Remark 3.19. The space S^* is not the dual of S: the dual is the completion $\widehat{S}^*$ of S^* at its maximal graded ideal.

The proofs of the following two lemmas are left to the reader.

Proposition 3.20. *There is a unique k–algebra morphism $D : S^* \to \mathrm{End}_k S$ satisfying the following properties.*

1. *For $v^* \in V^*$, $D(v^*)$ is a derivation of S, i.e.,*

$$D(v^*)(xy) = D(v^*)(x)y + xD(v^*)(y)\,.$$

2. *For $v^* \in V^*$ and $v \in V$ we have $D(v^*)(v) =< v^*, v >$.*

Notice the following properties of D.

- For $\lambda \in k$, we have $D(\lambda) = \lambda \mathrm{Id}$.
- For x^* a homogeneous element of S^*, $D(x^*)$ is a degree $-\deg(x)$ endomorphism of S.
- For $g \in \mathrm{GL}(V)$, $x \in S$ and $x^* \in S^*$, we have

$$g(D(x^*)(x)) = D(g(x^*))(g(x))\,.$$

Let $(v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_r)$ be a basis of V, and let $(\frac{\partial}{\partial v_1}, \frac{\partial}{\partial v_2}, \ldots, \frac{\partial}{\partial v_r})$ be the dual basis of V^*. For $\mathbf{m} := (m_1, m_2, \ldots, m_r) \in \mathbb{N}^r$, we set

$$\mathbf{m}! := m_1! \cdots m_r!\ ,\ \mathbf{v}^{\mathbf{m}} := v_1^{m_1} \cdots v_r^{m_r}\ ,\ \frac{\partial}{\partial \mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{m}} := \frac{\partial}{\partial v_1}^{m_1} \cdots \frac{\partial}{\partial v_r}^{m_r}\ .$$

Lemma 3.21. *There is a natural duality between S and S^* defined by the formula*

$$\langle x^*, x\rangle := D(x^*)(x)(0)\,.$$

We have

$$\langle \frac{\partial}{\partial \mathbf{v}}^{\mathbf{m}'}, \mathbf{v}^{\mathbf{m}}\rangle = \begin{cases} \mathbf{m}! & \textit{if } \mathbf{m} = \mathbf{m}' \\ 0 & \textit{if not.} \end{cases}$$

In what follows, we assume that $k = \mathbb{C}$.

Assume that V is endowed with a positive definite hermitian product stable by G, and let us choose an orthonormal basis $(v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_r)$ of V. Let $(\frac{\partial}{\partial v_i})_{1 \le i \le r}$ denote the dual basis. For

$$x := \sum \lambda_{\mathbf{m}} \mathbf{v}^{\mathbf{m}} \in S$$

(with $\lambda_{\mathbf{m}} \in \mathbb{C}$), let us denote by x^* the element of S^* defined by

$$x^* := \sum \lambda_{\mathbf{m}}^* (\frac{\partial}{\partial \mathbf{v}})^{\mathbf{m}}$$

(where $\lambda_{\mathbf{m}}^*$ denotes the complex conjugate of $\lambda_{\mathbf{m}}$). Let $x = \sum \lambda_{\mathbf{m}} \mathbf{v}^{\mathbf{m}}$ and $y = \sum \mu_{\mathbf{m}} \mathbf{v}^{\mathbf{m}}$ be two elements of S. Then we have

$$\langle x^*, y\rangle = \sum_{\mathbf{m}} \lambda_{\mathbf{m}}^* \mu_m\,,$$

and in particular

$$\left(\langle x^*, x \rangle = \sum_{\mathbf{m}} |\lambda_m|^2 = 0 \right) \Leftrightarrow (x = 0)\,.$$

The map $x \mapsto x^*$ is an semi-isomorphism from S onto S^*. If X is any graded subspace of S, we denote by X^* its image through that semi-isomorphism. We set

$$(X^*)^\perp := \{ y \in S \,|\, (\forall x \in X)(\langle x^*, y \rangle = 0) \}\,.$$

Lemma 3.22. *Assume $k = \mathbb{C}$. Whenever X is any graded subspace of S, so is $(X^*)^\perp$, and we have*

$$X \oplus (X^*)^\perp = S\,.$$

Proof (of 3.22). Indeed, it is enough to prove that the equality holds for each homogeneous component, which is obvious.

Harmonic Elements

We set $R^* := S^{*G}$, and we denote by $\mathfrak{m}^*$ the maximal graded ideal of R^*.

Notice that the notation is consistent with the notation introduced previously about the anti-isomorphism $x \mapsto x^*$: the image of R and $\mathfrak{m}$ under such an anti-isomorphism are indeed respectively R^* and $\mathfrak{m}^*$.

Definition 3.23. *We call "harmonic elements" of S and we denote by* Har *the space defined by*

$$\mathrm{Har} := (\mathfrak{m}^* S^*)^\perp = \{ h \in S \,|\, (\forall x^* \in \mathfrak{m}^*)(\langle x^*, h \rangle = 0) \}\,.$$

Proposition 3.24. *We have a G–stable decomposition*

$$S = \mathfrak{m}S \oplus \mathrm{Har}\,.$$

Proof (of 3.24). It is clear that Har is stable by G. The assertion is a direct consequence of 3.22.

Notice that in particular the projection $S \twoheadrightarrow \mathrm{Har}$ parallel to $\mathfrak{m}S$ induces an isomorphism

$$S_G \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathrm{Har}\,.$$

3.4 Graded Characters and Applications

From now on, we assume that the field k has characteristic zero, and is large enough so that all irreducible representations of G on k are absolutely irreducible.

3.4.1 Graded Characters of Graded kG–Modules

A kG–module is a finite dimensional k–vector space endowed with an operation of G.

A graded kG–module is a graded k–vector space $M = \bigoplus_n M_n$ endowed with an operation of G (*i.e.*, for each n, M_n is a kG–module).

The graded character of M is then the class function

$$\mathrm{grchar}_M : G \to \mathbb{Z}((q))$$

defined by

$$\mathrm{grchar}_M(g) := \sum_n \mathrm{tr}(g\,;\, M_n)q^n\,.$$

In particular, $\mathrm{grchar}_M(1) = \mathrm{grdim}_k(M)\,.$

Example 3.25. Let X be a kG–module. We have

$$\mathrm{grchar}_{\Lambda(X)}(g) = \det{}_X(1 + gq) \quad \text{and} \quad \mathrm{grchar}_{S(X)}(g) = \frac{1}{\det_X(1 - gq)}\,.$$

Note that, since the Koszul complex is exact, we have

$$\mathrm{grchar}_{\Lambda(X)}(-g)\mathrm{grchar}_{S(X)}(g) = 1\,.$$

For all irreducible kG–module X, since by assumption X is absolutely irreducible, we have

$$\dim_k \mathrm{Hom}_{kG}(X, X) = 1\,.$$

Definition 3.26.

- *For all graded kG-module M, the graded multiplicity of X in M is the formal series* $\mathrm{grmult}(X, M) \in \mathbb{Z}((q))$ *defined by*

$$\mathrm{grmult}(X, M) := \mathrm{grdim}_k \mathrm{Hom}_{kG}(X, M)\,.$$

- *We call X–isotypic component of M and we denote by M_X the direct sum of all X–isotypic components of the homogeneous spaces M_n for $-\infty < n < +\infty$. Thus, M_X is a graded kG–submodule of M.*

The proof of the following proposition is easy and left to the reader.

Proposition 3.27. *Let X be an irreducible kG–module with character χ. We have*

1. $\mathrm{grchar}_{M_X} = \mathrm{grmult}(X, M)\chi\,.$
2. $\mathrm{grmult}(X, M) = \dfrac{1}{|G|} \sum_{g \in G} \mathrm{grchar}_M(g)\chi(g^{-1})\,.$

We also set (using preceding notation): $\mathrm{grmult}(\chi, M) := \mathrm{grmult}(X, M)\,.$

3.4.2 Isotypic Components of the Symmetric Algebra

As before, let V be an r-dimensional k–vector space and let G finite subgroup of $\mathrm{GL}(V)$. We denote by S the symmetric algebra of V, and we set $R := S^G$.

The algebra S is a graded kG–module. For all irreducible character χ of G on k, we let S_χ^G (or simply S_χ) denote the χ–isotypic component of S. Note that if 1_G is the trivial character of G, then $S_{1_G}^G = R$.

Lemma 3.28.

1. *Each S_χ^G is a graded kG–module, and a graded R–submodule of S.*
2. *We have*
$$S = \bigoplus_{\chi \in \mathrm{Irr}_k(G)} S_\chi^G \,.$$
3. *For χ an irreducible character of G we have (with obvious notation)*
$$\mathrm{grmult}(\chi, S) = \frac{1}{|G|} \sum_{g \in G} \frac{\chi(g^{-1})}{\det_V(1 - gq)} \quad \textit{and} \quad \mathrm{grchar}_{S_\chi^G} = \mathrm{grmult}(\chi, S)\, \chi \,.$$

Proof (of 3.28). Whenever S_n is a homogeneous component of degree n of S, multiplication by a homogeneous element $x \in R$ defines an isomorphism of kG–modules from S_n to xS_n. Thus multiplication by x sends S_χ^G into itself, which proves (1).

(2) is immediate. (3) results from 3.27.

For χ any class function on G, let us set

$$\langle S, \chi \rangle_G := \frac{1}{|G|} \sum_{g \in G} \frac{\chi(g^{-1})}{\det_V(1 - gq)} \,,$$

a linear form on χ.

3.4.3 Some Numerical Identities

By 3.28, (3), the coefficient of $\dfrac{1}{(1-q)^r}$ in the Laurent series development of $\langle S, \chi \rangle_G$ around $q = 1$ equals $\dfrac{\chi(1)}{|G|}$.

Let $\gamma(\chi)$ be the number such that the coefficient of $\dfrac{1}{(1-q)^{r-1}}$ in the Laurent series development of $\langle S, \chi \rangle_G$ around $q = 1$ equals $\dfrac{\gamma(\chi)}{2|G|}$. Thus

$$\langle S, \chi \rangle_G = \frac{\chi(1)}{|G|} \frac{1}{(1-q)^r} + \frac{\gamma(\chi)}{2|G|} \frac{1}{(1-q)^{r-1}} + \dots , \tag{3.3}$$

or, in other words

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\chi(1)}{|G|} &= ((1-q)^r (\langle S, \chi \rangle_G)|_{q=1} \\ \frac{\gamma(\chi)}{2|G|} &= -\frac{d}{dq}((1-q)^r (\langle S, \chi \rangle_G)|_{q=1} . \end{aligned}$$

Proposition 3.29.

1. *Let $\mathcal{A}$ the set of reflecting hyperplanes of G. We have*

$$\gamma(\chi) = \sum_{H \in \mathcal{A}} \gamma(\mathrm{Res}^G_{G(H)}(\chi)) .$$

2. *$\gamma(1_G)$ is the number of reflections of G.*

Proof (of 3.29).
(1) The set $\mathrm{Ref}(G)$ of all reflections of G is the disjoint union, for $H \in \mathcal{A}$, of the sets $\mathrm{Ref}(G(H))$ of reflections of the fixator (pointwise stabilizer) $G(H)$ of H. For $s \in \mathrm{Ref}(G)$, se wet $\zeta_s := \det_V(s)$. Since

$$\langle S, \chi \rangle_G = \frac{1}{|G|} \sum_{g \in G} \frac{\chi(g^{-1})}{\det_V(1-gq)} ,$$

we see that

$$\begin{aligned} \gamma(\chi) &= 2 \sum_{s \in \mathrm{Ref}(G)} \frac{\chi(s^{-1})}{1-\zeta_s} \\ &= 2 \sum_{H \in \mathcal{A}} \sum_{s \in \mathrm{Ref}(G(H))} \frac{\chi(s^{-1})}{1-\zeta_s} \\ &= \sum_{H \in \mathcal{A}} \gamma(\mathrm{Res}^G_{G_H}(\chi)) . \end{aligned}$$

(2) By the preceding assertion, it is enough to check (2) for the case $G = G(H)$. Then, following the above computation, we have

$$\begin{aligned} \gamma(1_{G(H)}) &= 2 \sum_{s \in \mathrm{Ref}(G(H))} \frac{1}{1-\zeta_s} \\ &= 2 \sum_{\substack{s \in G(H) \\ s \neq 1, s^2 = 1}} \frac{1}{2} + \sum_{\substack{s \in G(H) \\ s \neq 1, s^2 \neq 1}} \left(\frac{1}{1-\zeta_s} + \frac{1}{1-\zeta_s^{-1}} \right) \\ &= |\mathrm{Ref}(G(H))| . \end{aligned}$$

Proposition 3.30. *The development around $q = 1$ of the graded dimension of R has the form*

$$\mathrm{grdim}_k R = \frac{1}{|G|}\frac{1}{(1-q)^n} + \frac{|\mathrm{Ref} G|}{2|G|}\frac{1}{(1-q)^{n-1}} + \dots .$$

3.4.4 Isotypic Components Are Cohen–Macaulay

Proposition 3.31. *Whenever P is a parameter algebra of R, and whenever $\chi \in \mathrm{Irr}_k(G)$, the isotypic component S^G_χ is free over P.*

In particular the invariant algebra R is Cohen–Macaulay.

Proof (of 3.31). A parameter algebra P of R is a parameter algebra of S. Since S is free over itself, S is free over P. The proposition follows from 3.28, (2).

3.4.5 Computations with Power Series

Let P be a parameter algebra of R. We denote by $\mathfrak{m}_P$ the unique maximal graded ideal of P.

Let m denote the rank of R over P, which is also the dimension of the graded k-vector space $R/\mathfrak{m}_P R = k \otimes_P R$.

We call *P–exponents* of R the family $(e_1, e_2, \dots, e_m)$ of integers such that

$$\mathrm{grdim}_k(R/\mathfrak{m}_P R) = q^{e_1} + q^{e_2} + \dots + q^{e_m} .$$

Thus there exists a k–basis of $R/\mathfrak{m}_P R$ consisting of homogeneous elements of degrees respectively $e_1, e_2, \dots, e_m$.

Let $d_1, d_2, \dots, d_r$ be the characteristic degrees of P, so that

$$\mathrm{grdim}_k(P) = \frac{1}{(1-q^{d_1})(1-q^{d_2})\cdots(1-q^{d_r})} .$$

Since R is free on P, we have

$$R \simeq P \otimes_k R/\mathfrak{m}_P R .$$

Thus the graded dimension of R is

$$\mathrm{grdim}_k(R) = \frac{q^{e_1} + q^{e_2} + \dots + q^{e_m}}{(1-q^{d_1})(1-q^{d_2})\cdots(1-q^{d_r})} .$$

Now let $\chi \in \mathrm{Irr}_k(G)$. Let $\chi(1)m_\chi$ denote the rank of S_χ^G over P, which is also the dimension of the graded k-vector space $S_\chi^G/\mathfrak{m}_P S_\chi^G = k \otimes_P S_\chi^G$.

Since each homogeneous component of $S_\chi^G/\mathfrak{m}_P S_\chi^G$ is a direct sum of modules with character χ, the graded dimension of $S_\chi^G/\mathfrak{m}_P S_\chi^G$ has the form

$$\mathrm{grdim}\, S_\chi^G/\mathfrak{m}_P S_\chi^G = \chi(1)(q^{e_1(\chi)} + q^{e_2(\chi)} + \cdots + q^{e_{m_\chi}(\chi)})\,,$$

from which we deduce

$$\mathrm{grdim}_k(S_\chi^G) = \chi(1)\frac{q^{e_1(\chi)} + q^{e_2(\chi)} + \cdots + q^{e_{m_\chi}(\chi)}}{(1-q^{d_1})(1-q^{d_2})\cdots(1-q^{d_r})}\,.$$

Note that

$$\frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G} \mathrm{grchar}_{(S_\chi^G/\mathfrak{m}_P S_\chi^G)}(g)\chi(g^{-1}) = (q^{e_1(\chi)} + q^{e_2(\chi)} + \cdots + q^{e_{m_\chi}(\chi)})\,. \tag{3.4}$$

We set

$$\begin{aligned} &\mathrm{grmult}(\chi, S) := \langle S, \chi\rangle_G = \frac{q^{e_1(\chi)} + q^{e_2(\chi)} + \cdots + q^{e_{m_\chi}(\chi)}}{(1-q^{d_1})(1-q^{d_2})\cdots(1-q^{d_r})} \\ &E^P(\chi) := e_1(\chi) + e_2(\chi) + \cdots + e_{m_\chi}(\chi) = (\mathrm{grmult}(\chi, S/\mathfrak{M}_P S))_{|_{q=1}}\,. \end{aligned}$$

Proposition 3.32.

1. We have $(d_1 d_2 \cdots d_r) = m|G|$.
2. $|\mathrm{Ref}(G)| = \sum_{i=1}^{i=r}(d_i - 1) - \dfrac{2}{m}\sum_{j=1}^{j=m} e_j\,.$

Moreover, for all $\chi \in \mathrm{Irr}_k(G)$, *we have*

(3) $m_\chi = m\chi(1)\,,$
(4) $\gamma(\chi) = \chi(1)|\mathrm{Ref}(G)| + \dfrac{2}{m}\left(\chi(1)\sum_{i=1}^{i=m} e_j - \sum_{i=1}^{i=m_\chi} e_j(\chi)\right)\,.$

Proof (of 3.32). We first prove the following lemma.

Lemma 3.33. *Let* r, n, $d_1, d_2, \ldots, d_r$, $e_1, e_2, \ldots, e_n$ *be integers, and let* $\alpha(q)$ *the rational fraction defined by*

$$\alpha(q) := \frac{q^{e_1} + q^{e_2} + \cdots + q^{e_n}}{(1-q^{d_1})(1-q^{d_2})\cdots(1-q^{d_r})}\,.$$

Let

$$\alpha(q) = \frac{a_r}{(1-q)^r} + \frac{a_{r-1}}{(1-q)^{r-1}} + \ldots$$

be the Laurent development of $\alpha(q)$ *around* $q=1$. *We have*

1. $a_r(d_1 d_2 \cdots d_r) = n$,
2. $2a_{r-1}(d_1 d_2 \cdots d_r) = n \sum_{j=1}^{j=r}(d_j - 1) - 2\sum_{i=1}^{i=n} e_i$.

Proof (of 3.33). Set

$$\alpha_1(q) := (1-q)^r \alpha(q)\,.$$

Then

$$\alpha_1(q) = \frac{q^{e_1} + q^{e_2} + \cdots + q^{e_n}}{(1+q+\cdots+q^{d_1-1})\cdots(1+q+\cdots+q^{d_r-1})}\,.$$

To prove the first assertion, one computes $\alpha_1(q)$ for $q=1$.

To prove the second assertion, one computes the derivative of $\alpha_1(q)$ for $q=1$. We have

$$\alpha_1'(q) = \alpha_1(q)\left(\frac{e_1 q^{e_1-1} + \cdots + e_n q^{e_n-1}}{q^{e_1} + \cdots + q^{e_n}} - \sum_{j=1}^{j=r} \frac{1 + 2q + \ldots (d_j-1)q^{d_j-2}}{1 + q + \cdots + q^{d_j-1}}\right)\,.$$

It follows that

$$a_{r-1} = -\alpha_1'(1) = a_r\left(\frac{1}{2}\sum_{j=1}^{j=r}(d_j-1) - \frac{e_1 + \cdots + e_n}{n}\right)\,,$$

hence the value announced for a_{r-1}.

Let us notice the following particular case of what precedes. Let P be a polynomial algebra with characteristic degrees $d_1, d_2, \ldots, d_n$. Then

$$\mathrm{grdim}_k P = \frac{1}{d_1 d_2 \cdots d_n}\frac{1}{(1-q)^n} + \frac{\sum_{i=1}^{n}(d_i-1)}{2d_1 d_2\cdots d_n}\frac{1}{(1-q)^{n-1}} + \ldots\,. \tag{3.5}$$

Let us now prove 3.32.

We remark that

$$\frac{q^{e_1(\chi)} + q^{e_2(\chi)} + \cdots + q^{e_{m_\chi}(\chi)}}{(1-q^{d_1})(1-q^{d_2})\cdots(1-q^{d_r})} = \chi(1)\frac{1}{|G|}\,\frac{1}{(q-1)^r} + \frac{\gamma(\chi)}{2}\,\frac{1}{|G|}\,\frac{1}{(q-1)^{r-1}} + \ldots\,,$$

from which, applying the preceding lemma, we get

$$\begin{cases} \chi(1)\dfrac{1}{|G|}d_1 d_2\cdots d_r = m_\chi \\ \gamma(\chi)\dfrac{1}{|G|}d_1 d_2 \cdots d_r = m_\chi \displaystyle\sum_{j=1}^{j=r}(d_j-1) - 2\sum_{i=1}^{i=m_\chi} e_j(\chi)\,. \end{cases}$$

Specializing the above formulae to the case where $\chi = 1$, we get

$$\begin{cases} \frac{1}{|G|} d_1 d_2 \cdots d_r = m \\ |\mathrm{Ref}(G)| m = m \sum_{j=1}^{j=r} (d_j - 1) - 2 \sum_{i=1}^{i=m} e_j \,. \end{cases} \tag{3.6}$$

Using this in the general formulae gives

$$\begin{cases} \chi(1) m = m_\chi \\ \gamma(\chi) = \chi(1) |\mathrm{Ref}(G)| + \frac{2}{m} \left(\chi(1) \sum_{i=1}^{i=m} e_j - \sum_{i=1}^{i=m_\chi} e_j(\chi) \right) \,. \end{cases} \tag{3.7}$$

Theorem 3.34. *Assume that k is a any characteristic zero field. Let P be a parameter algebra for the algebra of invariant R, with degrees $(d_i)_{1 \le i \le r}$, and let us denote by m the rank of R over P.*

1. *the kG–module $S/\mathfrak{m}_P S$ is isomorphic to $(kG)^m$,*
2. *the PG–module S is isomorphic to $(PG)^m$,*
3. *we have $|G| m = \prod_{i=1}^{=r} d_i$.*

Proof (of 3.34). It is enough to prove the theorem when k is replaced by an extension. So we may assume that k is a splitting field for the group algebra kG, which we do. It suffices to prove that the (ordinary) character $(\mathrm{grchar}_{S/\mathfrak{m}_P S})_{|q=1}$ of the kG–module $S/\mathfrak{m}_P S$ equals the character of $(kG)^m$, *i.e.*, for all $\chi \in \mathrm{Irr}_k(G)$, the multiplicity of χ in $S/\mathfrak{m}_P S$ equals $m\chi(1)$, which is precisely the first formula in 3.7 above.

3.4.6 A Simple Example

Let us consider $G := \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} , \begin{pmatrix} -1 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 \end{pmatrix} \right\} \subset \mathrm{GL}_2(k)$. As before, we set $S := k[x, y]$ and $R := S^G$.

It is easy to check that

$$\mathrm{grdim}(R) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} (2n+1) q^n = \frac{1-q^4}{(1-q^2)^3} = \frac{1+q^2}{(1-q^2)^2} ,$$

from which one can deduce the two equalities

$$\begin{cases} R = k[x^2, xy, y^2] \simeq k[u, v, w]/(uw - v^2) \\ R = k[x^2, y^2] \oplus k[x^2, y^2] xy \,. \end{cases}$$

The first equality gives the formula

$$\mathrm{grdim}(R) = \frac{1-q^4}{(1-q^2)^3}$$

(see 2.23), while the second equality gives the formula

$$\mathrm{grdim}(R) = \frac{1+q^2}{(1-q^2)^2} \ :$$

in that case, we may choose $P := k[x^2, y^2]$, and then $m = 1$, $e_1 = 0, e_2 = 2$.

Chapter 4
Finite Reflection Groups in Characteristic Zero

4.1 The Shephard–Todd/Chevalley–Serre Theorem

From now on we keep the notation previously introduced:

- V is an r–dimensional vector space over the characteristic 0 field k,
- S is the symmetric algebra of V, $\mathfrak{N}$ is its maximal graded ideal,
- G is a finite subgroup of $\mathrm{GL}(V)$, $\mathrm{Ref}(G)$ is the set of reflections in G,
- $R = S^G$ is the invariant algebra, $\mathfrak{M}$ is its maximal graded ideal, $S_G := S/\mathfrak{M}S$ is the coinvariant algebra.

Theorem 4.1.

1. *The following assertions are equivalent.*
   - *(i) G is generated by reflections.*
   - *(ii) R is a polynomial algebra.*
   - *(iii) S is a free R–module.*
   - *(iv) $R \otimes S_G \simeq S$ as graded R–modules.*
2. *If this is the case, let us denote by $(d_1, d_2, \dots, d_r)$ the characteristic degrees of R. Then*
   - *(a) $|G| = d_1 d_2 \cdots d_r$,*
   - *(b) $|\mathrm{Ref}(G)| = d_1 - 1 + d_2 - 1 + \cdots + d_r - 1$,*
   - *(c) As ungraded RG–modules (resp. kG–modules), we have $S \simeq RG$ (resp. $S_G \simeq kG$).*

Proof (of 4.1). We shall prove (i)⇒(iv)⇒(iii)⇒(ii)⇒(i):

- The proof of (i)⇒(iv) uses the Demazure operators that we introduce below.
- (iv)⇒(iii) is clear, and (iii)⇒(ii) is theorem 2.35.
- We shall then prove that (ii)⇒ (2).
- Finally we shall prove (ii)⇒i) using that (i)⇒(ii) and that (ii)⇒ (2).

So let us start with (i)⇒(iv).

M. Broué, *Introduction to Complex Reflection Groups and Their Braid Groups*, Lecture Notes in Mathematics 1988,
DOI 10.1007/978-3-642-11175-4_4,

The Demazure operators

Let $r = (v, v^*)$ be a root in $V \otimes V^*$, defining the reflection s_r, and the reflecting pair (L_r, H_r) (where $L_r = kv$ and $H_r = \ker v^*$). Since s belongs to the inertia group of the ideal SL_r, whenever $x \in S$ there is an element $\Delta_r(x) \in S$ such that

$$s_r(x) - x = \Delta_r(x)v\,.$$

It is easy to check the following properties.

(δ_1) The operator $\Delta_r : S \longrightarrow S$ has degree -1, and extends the linear form $v^* : V \to k$.

(δ_2) We have

$$\Delta_r(xy) = x\Delta_r(y) + \Delta_r(x)y + \Delta_r(x)\Delta_r(y)v \quad \text{and} \quad \Delta_r(x) = 0 \Leftrightarrow x \in R\,,$$

from which it follows that Δ_r is an R–linear endomorphism of S. Thus in particular Δ_r induces a degree -1 endomorphism of the coinvariant algebra S_G.

Proposition 4.2. *Assume G generated by reflections. Let $x \in S_G$.*

The following assertions are equivalent

(i) $x \in k$,
(ii) *for all roots r such that $s_r \in G$, $\Delta_r(x) = 0$.*
(iii) *If x is homogeneous of degree $n \geq 1$, there exist roots $r_1, r_2, \ldots, r_n$ such that*

$$\Delta_{r_1}\Delta_{r_2}\cdots\Delta_{r_n}(x) \in k^\times\,.$$

Proof (of 4.2).

(1) It suffices to prove the assertion for the case where x is homogeneous. Now since G is generated by its reflections, we see that (ii) hold if and only if x is fixed by G. We quote 3.13 to conclude.

(2) Follows from (1) by induction on the degree of x.

Theorem 4.3. *Assume G is generated by reflections.*

Then for each choice of a G–stable graded submodule T of S such that $\mathfrak{M}S \oplus T = S$, the morphism

$$\mu_T : R \otimes S_G \longrightarrow S$$

is an isomorphism.

Proof (of 4.3). We know that μ_T is onto (see 3.14). It suffices to prove that if $(x_1, \ldots, x_m)$ is a family of homogeneous elements of S whose image in S_G is k–free, then $(x_1, \ldots, x_m)$ is R–free.

Assume this is not the case. Choose m minimal such that there is a family of homogeneous elements $(x_1, x_2, \ldots, x_m)$ in S which is not R–free, while it defines a free family in S_G. Assume that $\deg x_1 \leq \deg x_i$. Let

$$t_1x_1 + \cdots + t_mx_m = 0\,,$$

(where $t_i \in R$, $t_i \neq 0$) be a dependance relation.

By 4.2, (2), there is a family (perhaps empty) of roots $(r_1, r_2, \ldots, r_n)$ (where $n = \deg x_1$) such that, if $\Delta := \Delta_{r_1}\Delta_{r_2}\cdots\Delta_{r_n}$, then $\Delta(x_1) \in k^\times$. Moreover, since Δ is an R–endomorphism of S, we get a dependance relation

$$t_1\Delta(x_1) + \cdots + t_m\Delta(x_m) = 0\,.$$

Let us set $\lambda := -\Delta(x_1)^{-1}$, and $u_i := \lambda \mathrm{pr}_G(\Delta(x_i))$ for $i \geq 2$. We have

$$t_1 = \lambda t_2\Delta(x_2) + \cdots + \lambda t_m\Delta(x_m) = t_2u_2 + \cdots + t_mu_m\,,$$

which implies

$$t_2(x_2 + u_2x_1) + \ldots t_m(x_m + u_mx_1) = 0\,.$$

We see that the family $(x_2+u_2x_1, \ldots, x_m+u_mx_1)$ is a family of homogeneous elements of S which defines a free family in S_G: a contradiction with the minimality of m.

Let us prove (ii)⇒(2).

Let us use notation from §9. We may choose $P = R$ hence $m = 1$. So we see that 3.34 does imply (c), and moreover by 3.32 we have

$$\begin{cases} |G| = d_1d_2\cdots d_r \\ |\mathrm{Ref}(G)| = \displaystyle\sum_{i=1}^{i=r}(d_i - 1) \end{cases}$$

from which (2) follows.

Let us now prove that (ii)⇒(i).

Let $G^0 := \langle \mathrm{Ref}(G)\rangle$. Let us set $R^0 := S^{G^0}$, and thus $R \subseteq R^0$.

Since (i)⇒(ii), we know that R^0 is a polynomial algebra. Let us denote by $(d_1^0 \leq d_2^0 \leq \cdots \leq d_r^0)$ its family of characteristic degrees. If $(d_1 \leq d_2 \leq \cdots \leq d_r)$ denotes the set of characteristic degrees of R, we know that, for all $i = 1, \ldots, r$, we have $d_i^0 \leq d_i$ (see 2.28).

On the other hand, by (2) we know that

$$|\mathrm{Ref}(G)| = \sum_{i=1}^{i=r}(d_i - 1) = \sum_{i=1}^{i=r}(d_i^0 - 1)\,,$$

from which it follows that for all i, $d_i = d_i^0$. But since $|G| = d_1d_2\cdots d_r$ and $|G^0| = d_1^0d_2^0\cdots d_r^0$, we see that $G = G^0$.

4.2 Steinberg Theorem and First Applications

4.2.1 The Jacobian as a Monomial

We shall compute the Jacobian $\mathrm{Jac}(S/R)$ for G a complex reflection group. Whenever (H, L) is a reflecting pair for G, let us choose a nonzero element $j_H \in L$. We recall that we denote by e_H the order of the cyclic group $G(H)$.

Proposition 4.4. *We have*

$$\mathrm{Jac}(S/R) = \prod_{H \in \mathcal{A}} j_H^{e_H - 1}\,.$$

Proof (of 4.4). Let $(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r)$ be an algebraic basis of R. For $(v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_r)$ a basis of V (hence an algebraic basis of S), we recall that $\mathrm{Jac}(S/R) = \det\left(\frac{\partial u_i}{\partial v_j}\right)_{i,j}$.

If $(d_1, d_2, \ldots, d_r)$ are the characteristic degrees of R, it follows that $\deg \mathrm{Jac}(S/R) = (d_1 - 1) + (d_2 - 1) + \cdots + (d_r - 1)$, and then (cf. above 4.1) that $\deg \mathrm{Jac}(S/R) = \sum_{H \in \mathcal{A}} e_H - 1$.

It suffices then to prove that for $H \in \mathcal{A}$, $j_H^{e_H - 1}$ divides $\mathrm{Jac}(S/R)$.

Let (L, H) be the reflecting pair corresponding to H. We choose a basis $(v_1 := j_H, v_2, \ldots, v_{r-1})$ of V such that $(v_2, \ldots, v_r)$ is a basis of H. For $x \in S$, if $P(t_1, t_2, \ldots, t_r) \in k[t_1, t_2, \ldots, t_r]$ is the polynomial such that $x = P(j_H, v_2, \ldots, v_r)$, we set $\partial_L x := \dfrac{\partial P}{\partial t_1}(j_H, v_2, \ldots, v_r)$. It suffices to prove that for $u \in R$, $j_H^{e_H - 1}$ divides $\partial_L u$.

Let s be a generator of $G(H)$, and let ζ_s denote its determinant. Since u is invariant under s, for $u = P(j_H, v_2, \ldots, v_r)$, we have

$$P(\zeta_s j_H, v_2, \ldots, v_r) = P(j_H, v_2, \ldots, v_r)\,,$$

which yields

$$\frac{\partial P}{\partial t_1}(\zeta_s t_1, t_2, \ldots, t_r) = \zeta_s^{e_H - 1} \frac{\partial P}{\partial t_1}(t_0, t_2, \ldots, t_r)\,.$$

The required property results from 3.12.

4.2.2 Action of the Normalizer and Generalized Degrees

Let $G \subset \mathrm{GL}(V)$ be a finite group generated by reflections. We set

$$N(G) := N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G) \quad \text{and} \quad \overline{N}(G) := N(G)/G\,.$$

The group $\overline{N}(G)$ acts on R, hence on $\mathfrak{M}$ and on the finite dimensional graded k–vector space $V_G := \mathfrak{M}/\mathfrak{M}^2$. The graded dimension of V_G is

$$\mathrm{grdim} V_G = q^{d_1} + q^{d_2} + \cdots + q^{d_r} = \sum_d r(d) q^d \,.$$

Let H be a subgroup of $\overline{N}(G)$.

Let us denote by ξ_d the character of the representation of H on the space V_G^d of degree d elements of V_G (a space of dimension $r(d)$). Thus the graded character of the kH–module V_G is

$$\mathrm{grchar}_{V_G} = \sum_d \xi_d q^d \,,$$

and we have

$$\mathrm{grchar}_{V_G}(1) = \sum_d \xi_d(1) q^d = \sum_d r(d) q^d \,.$$

For each d, we have

$$\xi_d = \sum_{\nu \in \mathrm{Irr}(H)} m_d(\nu)\nu \text{ where } m_d(\nu) = \langle \xi_d, \nu \rangle \,.$$

The family

$$(d,\nu)_{d \geq 0, \nu \in \mathrm{Irr}(H)} \text{ where } (d,\nu) \text{ is repeated } m_d(\nu) \text{ times}$$

is called the family of *generalized invariant degrees of* (G,H).

For each d, let us denote by $X_i(d,\nu)_{\nu, i=1,\dots,m_d(\nu)}$ a family of H–stable subspaces of the space $\mathfrak{M}^d$ of degree d elements of $\mathfrak{M}$, such that

$$\mathfrak{M}^d = (\mathfrak{M}^2)^d \oplus \bigoplus_{\nu,i} X_i(d,\nu) \,.$$

Then we have

$$R = k[X_i(d,\nu)_{d,\nu,i=1,\dots,m_d(\nu)}] \,.$$

The choice, for all d, ν, i, of a basis of $X_i(d,\nu)$, provides a set of homogeneous algebraically elements $(u_1, u_2, \dots, u_r)$ such that $R = k[u_1, u_2, \dots, u_r]$.

Action of an Element

Let $n \in N(G)$, with image $\overline{n}$ in $\overline{N}(G)$. By applying what precedes to the cyclic group H generated by $\overline{n}$, we see that

Theorem–Definition 4.5 *Let $(\zeta_1, \zeta_2, \ldots, \zeta_r)$ be the spectrum of $\overline{n}$ in its action on $V_G = \mathfrak{M}/\mathfrak{M}^2$.*

- *There is an algebraic basis $(u_1, u_2, \ldots, u_r)$ of R, with degrees $(d_1, d_2, \ldots, d_r)$, such that, for $1 \leq i \leq r$, we have $n(u_i) = \zeta_i u_i$.*
- *We have*
$$(\zeta_1, \zeta_2, \ldots, \zeta_r) = (1, 1, \ldots, 1) \;\Leftrightarrow\; n \in G\,.$$

The family $((d_1, \zeta_1), (d_1, \zeta_1), , \ldots, (d_1, \zeta_1))$ is called the family of generalized degrees of $(G, \overline{n})$.

First Application: Order of the Center

Proposition 4.6. *Assume that G acts irreducibly on V. We have*

$$|ZG| = \gcd\{d_1, d_2, \ldots, d_r\}\,.$$

Proof (of 4.6). Since G is irreducible, $ZG = \{\zeta \mathrm{Id}_V \mid (\zeta \mathrm{Id}_V \in k^\times)(\zeta \mathrm{Id}_V \in G$.

If $\zeta \mathrm{Id}_V \in G$, then by applying it to the invariant polynomials we see that for each degree d_i we have $\zeta^{d_i} = 1$.

Reciprocally, let $d := \gcd\{d_1, d_2, \ldots, d_r\}$. Let ζ be a root of unity of order d. Since for all i we have $\zeta^{d_i} = 1$, the generalized degrees of the pair $(G, \zeta \mathrm{Id}_V)$ are $(d_1, 1), (d_2, 1), \ldots (d_r, 1)$, proving that $\zeta \mathrm{Id}_V \in G$.

4.2.3 Steinberg Theorem

Theorem 4.7 (Steinberg theorem). *Let G be a finite reflection group on V. Let X be a subset of V. Then the fixator $G(X) = C_G(X)$ of X is a reflection group, generated by those reflections in G whose reflecting hyperplane contains X.*

The proof given below is due to Gus Lehrer [Le]. The reader may refer to [St] for the original proof, or to [Bou1], Ch. v, §6, ex. 8, for another proof.

Proof (of 4.7). It is clear that it is enough to prove that the fixator of an element $v \in V$ is generated by reflections, which we shall prove.

Let $\mathrm{Ref}(G(v))$ be the set of all reflections in $G(v)$, *i.e.*, those reflections of G whose reflecting hyperplane contains v. Let $G(v)^0$ be the subgroup of $G(v)$ generated by $\mathrm{Ref}(G(v))$. We shall prove that $G(v)^0 = G(v)$.

Now let us consider G as acting (through the contragredient representation) on the dual V^*. Let us denote by S^* the symmetric algebra of V^* (notice that S^* is not the dual vector space of S).

Since $G(v)^0$ is a normal subgroup of $G(v)$, whenever $g \in G(v)$, we can consider the generalized characteristic degrees $((d_1(v), \zeta_1), \dots, (d_r(v), \zeta_r))$ of the pair $(G(v)^0, g)$ acting on S^*, and it suffices (see 4.5) to prove that $\zeta_i = 1$ for $i = 1, 2, \dots, r$ to ensure that $g \in G(v)^0$.

Let $(x_1, x_2, \dots, x_r)$ be a basis of V^*.

Let $(u_1^{(v)}, u_2^{(v)}, \dots, u_r^{(v)})$ be an algebraic basis of $S^{*G(v)^0}$ such that, for $1 \le i \le r$, we have $g(u_i^{(v)}) = \zeta_i u_1^{(v)}$. In particular, each $u_i^{(v)}$ is a polynomial in $(x_1, x_2, \dots, x_r)$.

Let $(u_1, u_2, \dots, u_r)$ be an algebraic basis of $R^* := S^{*G}$. Since $R^* \subseteq S^{*G(v)^0}$, there exist polynomials $P_i(t_1, t_2, \dots, t_r) \in k[t_1, t_2, \dots, t_r]$ such that, for $i = 1, 2, \dots, r$, we have $u_i = P_i(u_1^{(v)}, u_2^{(v)}, \dots, u_r^{(v)})$.

- On one hand, since u_i is fixed by g, we have

$$P_i(\zeta_1 t_1, \zeta_2 t_2, \dots, \zeta_r t_r) = P_i(t_1, t_2, \dots, t_r)\,.$$

Taking the partial derivative yields

$$\zeta_j \frac{\partial P_i}{\partial t_j}(\zeta_1 t_1, \zeta_2 t_2, \dots, \zeta_r t_r) = \frac{\partial P_i}{\partial t_j}(t_1, t_2, \dots, t_r)$$

hence

$$g\left(\frac{\partial P_i}{\partial t_j}(t_1, t_2, \dots, t_r)\right) = \zeta_j^{-1}\frac{\partial P_i}{\partial t_j}(t_1, t_2, \dots, t_r)\,.$$

Apply the preceding equality to the vector v. Since $g(v) = v$, we get

$$\langle \frac{\partial P_i}{\partial t_j}(u_1^{(v)}, u_2^{(v)}, \dots, u_r^{(v)}), v\rangle = \zeta_j \langle \frac{\partial P_i}{\partial t_j}(u_1^{(v)}, u_2^{(v)}, \dots, u_r^{(v)}), v\rangle\,.$$

Thus we see that if $\zeta_j \neq 1$, for $i = 1, 2, \dots, r$, we have

$$\langle \frac{\partial P_i}{\partial t_j}(u_1^{(v)}, u_2^{(v)}, \dots, u_r^{(v)}), v\rangle = 0\,.$$

- On the other hand, we have

$$\frac{\partial u_i}{\partial x_j} = \sum_{m=1}^{m=r} \frac{\partial P_i}{\partial t_m}(u_1^{(v)}, u_2^{(v)}, \dots, u_r^{(v)})\, \frac{\partial u_m^{(v)}}{\partial x_j}\,,$$

hence

$$\det\left(\frac{\partial u_i}{\partial x_j}\right) = \det\left(\frac{\partial P_i}{\partial t_m}(u_1^{(v)}, u_2^{(v)}, \dots, u_r^{(v)})\right) \det\left(\frac{\partial u_m^{(v)}}{\partial x_j}\right)\,.$$

For each reflecting hyperplane $H \in \mathcal{A}$, let us denote by j_H^* a linear form on V with kernel H. Then we have (up to a nonzero scalar)

$$\det\left(\frac{\partial u_i}{\partial x_j}\right) = \prod_{(H\in\mathcal{A})} {j_H^*}^{e_H-1} \quad\text{and}\quad \det\left(\frac{\partial u_m^{(v)}}{\partial x_j}\right) = \prod_{(H\in\mathcal{A})(\langle j_H^*,v\rangle=0)} {j_H^*}^{e_H-1}$$

hence

$$\det\left(\frac{\partial P_i}{\partial t_m}(u_1^{(v)}, u_2^{(v)}, \ldots, u_r^{(v)})\right) = \prod_{(H\in\mathcal{A})(\langle j_H^*,v\rangle\neq 0)} {j_H^*}^{e_H-1},$$

and in particular

$$\langle\det\left(\frac{\partial P_i}{\partial t_m}(u_1^{(v)}, u_2^{(v)}, \ldots, u_r^{(v)})\right), v\rangle \neq 0\,.$$

Thus we see that, for $j = 1, 2, \ldots, r$, we have $\zeta_j = 1$.

4.2.4 Fixed Points of Elements of G

Let X be a subset of V. Let us set

$$\overline{X} := \bigcap_{h\in\mathcal{A}, H\supseteq X} H\,.$$

Then it follows from Steinberg theorem that $G(X) = G(\overline{X})$.

Definition 4.8. *The fixators of subsets of V in G are called the parabolic subgroups of G.*

Let us denote by $\mathrm{Par}(G)$ the set of parabolic subgroups of G, and let us denote by $I(\mathcal{A})$ the set of intersections of elements of $\mathcal{A}$. Then the map

$$I(\mathcal{A}) \to \mathrm{Par}(G)\ ,\ X \mapsto G(X)$$

is a G–equivariant inclusion–reversing bijection.

The following result gives another description of $I(\mathcal{A})$.

Proposition 4.9. *The set $I(\mathcal{A})$ coincides with the set of fixed points V^g for $g \in G$.*

Proof (of 4.9).

1. We prove by induction on $|G|$ that for $g \in G$, the space V^g of fixed points of g is a reflecting hyperplanes intersection.

Notice that the property is obvious when G is cyclic.

By Steinberg theorem, we know that $G(V^g)$ is a reflection group. If $G(V^g)$ is a proper subgroup of G, since $g \in G(V^g)$, by the induction hypothesis we see that V^g is an intersection of reflecting hyperplanes for $G(V^g)$, which are reflecting hyperplanes for G.

2. Conversely, let us prove that whenever $X \in \mathcal{A}$, there exists $g \in G$ such that $X = V^g$. Choose $H_1, H_2, \ldots, H_m \in \mathcal{A}$ with m minimal such that $X = H_1 \cap H_2 \cap \cdots \cap H_m$. Thus the corresponding lines $L_1, L_2, \ldots, L_m$ are linearly independent, *i.e.*, $L_1 + L_2 + \cdots + L_m = L_1 \oplus L_2 \oplus \ldots, \oplus L_m$. The desired result will follow from the next lemma.

Lemma 4.10. *Let $H_1, H_2, \ldots, H_m$ be a family of linearly independent reflecting hyperplanes. For all $i = 1, 2, \ldots, m$, let us choose a reflection $s_i \in G(H_i)$, and let us set $g := s_1 s_2 \cdots s_m$. Then $V^g = H_1 \cap H_2 \cap \cdots \cap H_m$.*

Proof (of 4.10). We argue by induction on m. The case $m = 1$ is trivial. Assume the property holds for $m - 1$ independent hyperplanes. Since obviously $\bigcap_{1 \le i \le m} H_i \subseteq V^g$, it is enough to prove that $V^g \subseteq \bigcap_{1 \le i \le m} H_i$. Let $v \in V^g$.

Whenever $x \in V$ and $i = 1, 2, \ldots, m$, we have $s_i(x) \equiv x \mod L_i$, hence

$$(s_2 s_3 \cdots s_m)(v) \equiv v \mod L_2 \oplus L_3 \oplus \cdots \oplus L_m .$$

Since $(s_1 s_2 \cdots s_m)(v) = v$, we also have

$$(s_2 s_3 \cdots s_m)(v) = s_1^{-1}(v) \equiv v \mod L_1 .$$

It follows that

$$(s_2 s_3 \cdots s_m)(v) = s_1^{-1}(v) = v ,$$

thus $v \in H_1$, and also by the induction hypothesis we have $v \in H_2 \cap H_3 \cap \cdots \cap H_m$.

4.2.5 Braid Groups

Recall that we set $V^{\text{reg}} := V - \cup_{H \in \mathcal{A}} H$. We denote by $p : V^{\text{reg}} \to V^{\text{reg}}/G$ the canonical surjection.

Definition 4.11. Let $x_0 \in V^{\text{reg}}$. *We introduce the following notation for the fundamental groups:*

$$P := \Pi_1(V^{\text{reg}}, x_0) \quad \text{and} \quad B := \Pi_1(V^{\text{reg}}/G, p(x_0)) ,$$

and we call B and P respectively the braid group $($*at* $x_0)$ *and the* pure braid group $($*at* $x_0)$ *associated to G.*

We shall often write $\Pi_1(V^{\mathrm{reg}}/G, x_0)$ for $\Pi_1(V^{\mathrm{reg}}/G, p(x_0))$.

The covering $V^{\mathrm{reg}} \to V^{\mathrm{reg}}/G$ is Galois by Steinberg's theorem, hence the projection p induces a surjective map $B \twoheadrightarrow B$, $\sigma \mapsto \overline{\sigma}$, as follows:

Let $\tilde{\sigma} : [0,1] \to V^{\mathrm{reg}}$ be a path in V^{reg}, such that $\tilde{\sigma}(0) = x_0$, which lifts σ. Then $\overline{\sigma}$ is defined by the equality $\overline{\sigma}(x_0) = \tilde{\sigma}(1)$.

We have the following short exact sequence:

$$1 \to P \to B \to G \to 1 , \tag{4.1}$$

where the map $B \to G$ is defined by $\sigma \mapsto \overline{\sigma}$.

Remark 4.12. Bessis has recently proved that the spaces V^{reg} and V^{reg}/G are $K(\pi,1)$-spaces (see [Bes3]).

Braid Reflections Around the Hyperplanes

For $H \in \mathcal{A}$, we set $\zeta_H := \zeta_{e_H}$, We denote by s_H and call *distinguished reflection* the reflection in G with reflecting hyperplane H and determinant ζ_H. We set

$$L_H := \operatorname{im}(s_H - \mathrm{Id}_V) .$$

For $x \in V$, we set $x = \mathrm{pr}_H(x) + \mathrm{pr}_H^{\perp}(x)$ with $\mathrm{pr}_H(x) \in H$ and $\mathrm{pr}_H^{\perp}(x) \in L_H$.

Thus, we have $s_H(x) = \zeta_H \mathrm{pr}_H^{\perp}(x) + \mathrm{pr}_H(x)$.

If $t \in \mathbb{R}$, we set $\zeta_H^t := \exp(2i\pi t/e_H)$, and we denote by s_H^t the element of $\mathrm{GL}(V)$ (a pseudo–reflection if $t \neq 0$) defined by:

$$s_H^t(x) = \zeta_H^t \mathrm{pr}_H^{\perp}(x) + \mathrm{pr}_H(x) . \tag{4.2}$$

Notice that, denoting by $s_H^{te_H}$ the e_H-th power of the endomorphism s_H^t, we have

$$s_H^{te_H}(x) = \exp(2\pi i t)\mathrm{pr}_H^{\perp}(x) + \mathrm{pr}_H(x) . \tag{4.3}$$

For $x \in V$, we denote by $\sigma_{H,x}$ the path in V from x to $s_H(x)$, defined by:

$$\sigma_{H,x} : [0,1] \to V \ , \ t \mapsto s_H^t(x) .$$

and we denote by $\pi_{H,x}$ the loop in V with initial point x defined by:

$$\pi_{H,x} : [0,1] \to V \ , \ t \mapsto s_H^{te_H}(x) .$$

Let γ be a path in V^{reg}, with initial point x_0 and terminal point x_H.

- The path defined by $s_H(\gamma^{-1}) : t \mapsto s_H(\gamma^{-1}(t))$ is a path in V^{reg} going from $s_H(x_H)$ to $s_H(x_0)$. We define the path $\sigma_{H,\gamma}$ from x_0 to $s_H(x_0)$ as follows:

  $$\sigma_{H,\gamma} := s_H(\gamma^{-1}) \cdot \sigma_{H,x_H} \cdot \gamma .$$

  It is not difficult to see that, provided x_H is chosen "close to H and far from the other reflecting hyperplanes", the path $\sigma_{H,\gamma}$ is in V^{reg}, and its homotopy class does not depend on the choice of x_H.

- We define the loop $\pi_{H,\gamma}$ by the formula

$$\pi_{H,\gamma} := \gamma^{-1} \cdot \pi_{H,x_H} \cdot \gamma \, .$$

Definition 4.13. *We call braid reflections the elements $\mathbf{s}_{H,\gamma} \in B$ defined by the paths $\sigma_{H,\gamma}$. If the image of $\mathbf{s}_{H,\gamma}$ in G is s_H, we say that $\mathbf{s}_{H,\gamma}$ is an s_H–braid reflection, or an H–braid reflection.*

We still denote by $\pi_{H,\gamma}$ the element of P defined by the loop $\pi_{H,\gamma}$.

The following properties are immediate.

Lemma 4.14.

1. *Whenever γ' is a path in V^{reg}, with initial point x_0 and terminal point x_H, if τ denotes the loop in V^{reg} defined by $\tau := \gamma'^{-1}\gamma$, one has*

$$\sigma_{H,\gamma'} = \tau \cdot \sigma_{H,\gamma} \cdot \tau^{-1}$$

   and in particular $\mathbf{s}_{H,\gamma}$ and $\mathbf{s}_{H,\gamma'}$ are conjugate in P.
2. *In the group B, we have*
$$\mathbf{s}_{H,\gamma}^{e_H} = \pi_{H,\gamma} \, .$$

The variety V (resp. V/G) is simply connected, the hyperplanes (resp. the images of the reflecting hyperplanes in V/G) are irreducible divisors (irreducible closed subvarieties of codimension one), and the braid reflections as defined above are "generators of the monodromy" around these irreducible divisors. Then it is not difficult to check the following fundamental theorem.

Theorem 4.15.

1. *The braid group is generated by the braid reflections $(\mathbf{s}_{H,\gamma})$ (for all H and all γ).*
2. *The pure braid group is generated by the elements $(\mathbf{s}_{H,\gamma}^{e_H})$*

4.3 Coinvariant Algebra and Harmonic Polynomials

4.3.1 On the Coinvariant Algebra

Let us recall our notation.

- V is an r–dimensional vector space on the characteristic zero field k, and G is a finite subgroup of $\mathrm{GL}(V)$ generated by reflections.

• S is the symmetric algebra of V, $R := S^G$ is the subalgebra of fixed points of G on S, a polynomial algebra over k with characteristic degrees $(d_1, d_2, \ldots, d_r)$ and maximal graded ideal $\mathfrak{M}$.

We know that S is a free R-module of rank $|G| = d_1 d_2 \cdots d_r$. We call coinvariant algebra the algebra

$$S_G := k \otimes_R S = S/\mathfrak{M}S\,.$$

We have $S = R \otimes_k S_G$.

• $\mathrm{Ref}(G)$ is the set of reflections of G and $\mathcal{A}$ is the set of their reflecting hyperplanes. We set $N^{\mathrm{hyp}} := |\mathcal{A}|$ and $N^{\mathrm{ref}} := |\mathrm{Ref}(G)|$. For $H \in \mathcal{A}$, $G(H)$ is the fixator of H in G, and e_H is its order. We have $N^{\mathrm{ref}} = d_1 - 1 + d_2 - 1 + \cdots + d_r - 1 = \sum_{H\in\mathcal{A}}(e_H - 1)$.

Proposition 4.16. *The maximal degree of an element of the coinvariant algebra S_G is N, the number of reflections.*

Proof (of 4.16). Since

$$\mathrm{grdim}_K(R) = \frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G}\frac{1}{\det(1-gx)} = \frac{1}{\prod_{i=1}^{i=r}(1-x^{d_i})}\,,$$

the graded character of the coinvariant algebra is

$$\chi_{S_G}(g) = \prod_{i=1}^{i=r}(1-x^{d_i})\frac{1}{\det(1-gx)}\,.$$

and its graded dimension is

$$\mathrm{grdim}_K S_G = \prod_{i=1}^{i=r}(1+x+\cdots+x^{d_i-1})\,.$$

In particular, we see that the maximal degree occurring in S_G is indeed N. Thus we have

$$S_G = \bigoplus_{n=0}^{n=N} S_G^n\,,$$

Corollary 4.17. *Let $\mathfrak{M}$ be the maximal graded ideal of R. Then we have*

$$\bigoplus_{n>N} S^n \subseteq S\mathfrak{M}\,.$$

4.3.2 Linear Characters and Their Associated Polynomials

Let us recall notation and results from §8. Whenever (L, H) is a reflecting pair of G, we denote by j_H a nonzero element of L, and if $\mathfrak{p}$ denotes the orbit of H under G, we set

$$j_{\mathfrak{p}} := \prod_{H \in \mathfrak{p}} j_H \,.$$

The linear character $\theta_{\mathfrak{p}} : G \to k^\times$ is defined by

$$g(j_{\mathfrak{p}}) = \theta_{\mathfrak{p}}(g) j_{\mathfrak{p}} \,,$$

and for $s \in \mathrm{Ref}(G)$ we have

$$\theta_{\mathfrak{p}}(s) = \begin{cases} \det_V(s) & \text{if } s \in G(H) \text{ for some } H \in \mathfrak{p} \,, \\ 1 & \text{if not.} \end{cases}$$

Since G is generated by reflections, we see in particular that for

$$j := \prod_{H \in \mathcal{A}} j_H$$

we have

$$(\forall g \in G)\ g(j) = \det_V(g) j \,.$$

Theorem 4.18. *Let G be a finite subgroup of $\mathrm{GL}(V)$ generated by reflections.*

1. *The restrictions induce an isomorphism*

$$\rho_G : \mathrm{Hom}(G, k^\times) \to \left(\prod_{H \in \mathcal{A}} \mathrm{Hom}(G(H), k^\times) \right)^G \,.$$

2. *Let $\theta \in \mathrm{Hom}(G, k^\times)$. For $H \in \mathcal{A}$, denote by $\mathfrak{p}$ its orbit under G. Then there is a unique integer $m_{\mathfrak{p}}(\theta)$ such that*

$$\mathrm{Res}^G_{G(H)}(\theta) = \det_V^{m_{\mathfrak{p}}(\theta)} \quad \textit{and} \quad 0 \le m_{\mathfrak{p}}(\theta) \le e_{\mathfrak{p}} - 1 \,.$$

Set

$$j_\theta := \prod_{\mathfrak{p} \in \mathcal{A}/G} j_{\mathfrak{p}}^{m_{\mathfrak{p}}(\theta)} \,.$$

We then have

$$S^G_\theta = R j_\theta \,.$$

Proof (of 4.18).

(1) The injectivity of ρ_G is an immediate consequence of the fact that G is generated by its reflections. The surjectivity results from 3.9.

(2) For each $H \in \mathcal{A}$, $\det_V$ generates $\mathrm{Hom}(G(H)), k^\times)$. This implies the existence and unicity of $m_\mathfrak{p}(\theta)$. Moreover, it is clear that $Rj_\theta \subset S_\theta^G$. Let us prove the inverse inclusion.

It suffices to check that for all $H \in \mathcal{A}$ and for all $x \in S_\theta^G$, x is divisible by $j_H^{m_\mathfrak{p}(\theta)}$. We use the same methods as in the proof of 3.11: for $H \in \mathcal{A}$, we denote (L, H) the associated reflecting pair, and we choose a basis $\{j_1, j_2, \dots, j_{r-1}\}$ of H. Let $P(t_0, t_1, \dots, t_{r-1}) \in k[t_0, t_1, \dots, t_{r-1}]$ such that $x = P(j_H, j_1, j_2, \dots, j_{r-1})$. Let s be a generator of $G(H))$, with determinant ζ_s (ζ_s is a primitive $e_\mathfrak{p}$–th root of unity).

Since $x \in S_\theta^G$, we have $P(\zeta_s t_0, t_1, \dots, t_{r-1}) = \zeta_s^{m_\mathfrak{p}(\theta)} P(t_0, t_1, \dots, t_{r-1})$. By 3.12, it follows that $t_0^{m_\mathfrak{p}(\theta)}$ divides $P(t_0, t_1, \dots, t_{r-1})$, *i.e.*, that $j_H^{m_\mathfrak{p}(\theta)}$ divides x.

Remark 4.19. For $\mathfrak{p} \in \mathcal{A}$, we have $j_{\theta_\mathfrak{p}} = j_\mathfrak{p}$.

We set
$$j'_\theta := j_{\theta^{-1}} = \prod_{\mathfrak{p} \in \mathcal{A}/G} j_\mathfrak{p}^{e_\mathfrak{p} - m_\mathfrak{p}(\theta)} = \prod_{H \in \mathcal{A}} j_H^{e_H - m_H(\theta)} .$$

We also set
$$j = j_{\det_V} \quad \text{and} \quad J := j' := \mathrm{Jac}(S/R) = j_{\det_V^{-1}} .$$

We have
$$j := \prod_{\mathfrak{p} \in \mathcal{A}/G} j_\mathfrak{p} = \prod_{H \in \mathcal{A}} j_H \quad \text{and} \quad J := \prod_{\mathfrak{p} \in \mathcal{A}/G} j'_\mathfrak{p} = \prod_{\mathfrak{p} \in \mathcal{A}/G} j_\mathfrak{p}^{e_\mathfrak{p} - 1} = \prod_{H \in \mathcal{A}} j_H^{e_H - 1} .$$

For $\mathfrak{p} \in \mathcal{A}$, the discriminant at $\mathfrak{p}$ (cf. 3.11 above) is such that
$$\Delta_\mathfrak{p} = j_\mathfrak{p} j'_\mathfrak{p} .$$

We call *discriminant of* G the element of R defined by
$$\Delta := \prod_{\mathfrak{p} \in \mathcal{A}/G} \Delta_\mathfrak{p} = jj' = \prod_{H \in \mathcal{A}} j_H^{e_H} .$$

The following properties result from what precedes.
Recall that we set $N^{\mathrm{hyp}} = |\mathcal{A}|$ *and* $N^{\mathrm{ref}} = |\mathrm{Ref}(G)|$. *We have*

$$\begin{aligned} \deg j_{\mathfrak{p}} &= \nu_{\mathfrak{p}}, \quad & \deg j'_{\mathfrak{p}} &= \nu_{\mathfrak{p}}(e_{\mathfrak{p}} - 1), \\ \deg j = \sum_{\mathfrak{p}} \nu_{\mathfrak{p}} &= N^{\mathrm{hyp}}, \quad & \deg J = \sum_{\mathfrak{p}} \nu_{\mathfrak{p}}(e_{\mathfrak{p}} - 1) &= N^{\mathrm{ref}}, \\ \deg \Delta_{\mathfrak{p}} &= \nu_{\mathfrak{p}} e_{\mathfrak{p}}, \quad & \deg \Delta = \sum_{\mathfrak{p}} \nu_{\mathfrak{p}} e_{\mathfrak{p}} &= N^{\mathrm{ref}} + N^{\mathrm{hyp}}. \end{aligned}$$

The Case of Cyclic Groups

Assume that $G \subset \mathrm{GL}(V)$ is a cyclic group of order e, consisting of the identity and of $e - 1$ reflections with hyperplane H and line L. Thus $V = L \oplus H$. Let us denote by j a nonzero element of L. Let us summarize in this case the values of all invariants introduced so far.

Let us denote the set of all irreducible characters of G as

$$\mathrm{Irr}(G) = \{1, \det_V, \det_V^2, \dots, \det_V^{e-1}\}\,.$$

We choose a basis $(j, y_1, y_2, \dots, y_{e-1})$ of V such that $(y_1, y_2, \dots, y_{e-1})$ is a basis of H. We have

$$S = k[j, y_1, y_2, \dots, y_{e-1}] \quad \text{and} \quad R = k[j^e, y_1, y_2, \dots, y_{e-1}]\,.$$

It is easy to check that for $0 \le j \le e$, we have

$$S^G_{\det_V^n} = R\, j^n\,,$$

which shows in particular that the unique exponent of $\det_V^n$ is n: we have

$$\mathrm{grdim}_k S^G_{\det_V^n} = \frac{q^n}{(1-q)^r(1-q^e)} \quad \text{and} \quad \mathrm{grmult}(\det_V^n, S_G) = q^n\,. \tag{4.4}$$

Proposition 4.20. *Assume G cyclic of order e, consisting of 1 and of reflections with line generated by j. Then*

$$\begin{cases} \mathrm{Irr}(G) = \{1, \det_V, \det_V^2, \dots, \det_V^{e-1}\} \\ j_{\det_V^n} = j^n\ , \\ \mathrm{grmult}(\det_V^n, S_G) = q^n\ , \\ \mathrm{Jac}(S/R) = j^{e-1}\ , \\ \Delta = j^e\,. \end{cases}$$

Duality and Isotypic Components

For $H \in \mathcal{A}$, let j_H^* denote a linear form on V with kernel H.

For $\theta : G \to k^\times$ a linear character of G, recall that we denote by $m_H(\theta)$ the integer such that $0 \le m_H(\theta) \le e_H - 1$ and $\mathrm{Res}^G_{G(H)}(\theta) = \det_V^{m_H(\theta)}$. We set

$$E(\theta) := \sum_{H \in \mathcal{A}} m_H(\theta)\,.$$

Let us denote by j_θ^* the homogeneous element of S^*, with degree $E(\theta)$, such that $g(j_\theta^*) = \theta^{-1}(g) j_\theta^*$. Thus we have

$$j_\theta^* = \prod_{H \in \mathcal{A}} {j_H^*}^{m_H(\theta)}\,, \text{ and } S^*_{\theta^{-1}} = R^* j_\theta^*\,.$$

The following lemma will be used later.

Lemma 4.21. *Whenever θ is a linear character of G, we have $\langle j_\theta^*, j_\theta \rangle \neq 0$.*

Proof (of 4.21). We first prove that whenever x is a homogeneous element of S with degree $E(\theta)$, there is $\lambda \in k$ such that $\langle j_\theta^*, x \rangle = \lambda \langle j_\theta^*, j_\theta \rangle$.

Indeed, let us set $x_\theta := \dfrac{1}{|G|} \sum_{g \in G} \theta^{-1}(g) g(x)$. We have $x_\theta = \lambda j_\theta$ for some $\lambda \in k$. Now, whenever $g \in G$, we have $\langle j_\theta^*, x \rangle = g(\langle j_\theta^*, x \rangle) = \langle j_\theta^*, \theta^{-1}(g) g(x) \rangle$, hence $\langle j_\theta^*, x \rangle = \langle j_\theta^*, x_\theta \rangle = \lambda \langle j_\theta^*, j_\theta \rangle$.

Thus we see that if $\langle j_\theta^*, j_\theta \rangle = 0$, then j_θ^* is orthogonal to all homogeneous elements of S of its degree, a contradiction.

The preceding lemma is actually a particular case of a result concerning general isotypic components, whose proof is left to the reader.

Lemma 4.22. *For $\chi' \in \mathrm{Irr}(G)$, $\chi' \neq \chi$, we have $\langle S^*_{\chi^*}, S_{\chi'} \rangle = 0$.*

4.3.3 The Harmonic Elements of a Reflection Group and the Poincaré Duality

The algebra morphism $D : S^* \to \mathrm{End}_k(S)$ defines a structure of S^*–module on S. The next result shows that this module is cyclic.

Recall that we set $\mathrm{Har} := (\mathfrak{M}^* S^*)^\perp$.

We set $S^*G = S^*/\mathfrak{M}^* S^*$, an algebra called the coinvariant dual algebra.

Theorem 4.23. *Let $J = \prod_{H \in \mathcal{A}} j_H^{e_H - 1}$ be the jacobian of G.*

1. The annihilator of J in S^* is $\mathfrak{M}^* S^*$, i.e.,

$$(x^* \in \mathfrak{M}^* S^*) \Leftrightarrow (D(x^*)(J) = 0)\,.$$

2. *We have*

$$\mathrm{Har} = S^*J = \{D(x^*)(J) \mid (x^* \in S^*\}\,.$$

3. *The map*

$$S_G^* \to \mathrm{Har}, \quad x^* \mapsto x^*J$$

is an isomorphism of S_G^*–modules.

Remark 4.24. It follows from the assertion (1) above and from Lemma 4.21 that $J^* \notin \mathfrak{M}^*S^*$, hence that $J \notin \mathfrak{M}S$.

In particular, the one dimensional space $S_G^{(N)}$ of elements of maximal degree of the coinvariant algebra S_G is generated by J.

Proof (of 4.23).

(1) For $x^* \in \mathfrak{M}^*$ and $g \in G$ we have

$$g(D(x^*)(J)) = D(g(x^*))(g(J) = \det_V^*(g)D(x^*)(J)\,,$$

and $D(x^*)(J) \in S_{\det_V^*}$, hence $D(x^*)(J)$ must be a multiple of J, which shows that $D(x^*)(J) = 0$. This establishes that $\mathfrak{M}^*$ annihilates J.

Conversely, assume that $D(x^*)(J) = 0$. In order to prove that $x^* \in \mathfrak{M}^*S^*$, we may assume that x^* is homogeneous. Let us argue by descending induction on the degree of x^*. Notice that, since the largest degree of $S^*/\mathfrak{M}^*S^*$ is N, all homogeneous elements of S^* with degree strictly larger than N belong to $\mathfrak{M}^*S^*$. Choose $x^* \in \mathfrak{M}^*S^*$ such that $\deg x^* \leq N$, and assume that our desired property is established for elements with degree strictly larger than $\deg(x^*)$.

Let s be a reflection in G, and let j_s^* be a non trivial eigenvector of s in V^*. Then $D(j_s^*x^*)(J) = 0$, so by induction hypothesis we have $j_s^*x^* \in \mathfrak{M}^*S^*$, *i.e.*, $j_s^*x^* = \sum_j \mu_j^*y_j^*$ with $\mu_j^* \in \mathfrak{M}^*$ and $y_j^* \in S^*$.

Applying s we get $\det_V(s)^*j_s^*s(x^*) = \sum_j \mu_j^*s(y_j^*)$, which yields

$$j_s^*\left(x^* - \det_V(s)^*s(x^*)\right) = \sum_j \mu_j^*\left(y_j^* - s(y_j^*)\right)\,.$$

Since each $y_j^* - s(y_j^*)$ is divisible by j_s^*, we get

$$x^* - \det_V(s)^*s(x^*) \in \mathfrak{M}^*S^*\,.$$

Thus x^* belongs to the $\det_V$–isotypic component of $S^*/\mathfrak{M}^*S^*$. That isotypic component is the image modulo $\mathfrak{M}^*S^*$ of R^*J^* (where J^* is the corresponding jacobian), hence x^* is an element of degree at least N of $S^*/\mathfrak{M}^*S^*$. Since by assumption the degree of x^* is smaller than N, we must have

$$x^* \equiv \lambda J^* \mod \mathfrak{M}^*S^* \quad \text{for some } \lambda \in k\,.$$

By the implication already proved above, since $\lambda J^* \in x^* + \mathfrak{M}^* S^*$, it follows that

$$D(\lambda J^*)(J) = 0\,.$$

By lemma 4.21, we conclude that $\lambda = 0$, hence that $x^* \in \mathfrak{M}^* S^*$ as desired.

(2) Let us prove that $S^* J \subseteq \mathrm{Har}$. Since by definition $\mathrm{Har} = (\mathfrak{M}^* S^*)^\perp$, we must prove that $\langle \mathfrak{M}^* S^*, J \rangle = 0$, which results from (1).

Let us now prove that $\mathrm{Har} \subseteq S^* J$. To do that, we prove that $(S^* J)^\perp \subseteq (\mathrm{Har})^\perp = \mathfrak{M}^* S^*$. Assume that $y^* \in (S^* J)^\perp$ *i.e.*,

$$(\forall x^* \in S^*)\, \langle y^*, D(x^*)(J) \rangle = 0\,.$$

Since

$$\langle y^*, D(x^*)(J) \rangle = \langle x^*, D(y^*)(J) \rangle\,,$$

we see $D(y^*)(J) = 0$ and $y^* \in \mathfrak{M}^* S^*$ by (1).

Assertion (3) is an immediate consequence of (1) and (2).

Theorem 4.25 (Poincaré duality).

1. *The pairing*

$$(S_G^*)^n \times (S_G^*)^{N-n} \to (S_G^*)^N\,, \quad (x, y) \mapsto xy$$

is a duality.

2. *The preceding isomorphism provides an isomorphism of graded modules*

$$S_G^* \otimes k_{\det_V^{-1}} \to \mathrm{Hom}_k(S_G^*, k)[N]\,.$$

Proof (of 4.25).

(1) Since $\mathrm{Har} = (\mathfrak{M}^* S^*)^\perp$ and $S_G^* = S/\mathfrak{M}^* S^*$, we see that for each n the pairing

$$(S_G^*)^n \times (\mathrm{Har})^n \to k\,, \quad (x^*, h) \mapsto \langle x^*, h \rangle$$

is a duality.

Since $h = y^* J$ for a well defined y^*, and since

$$\langle x^*, y^* J \rangle = \langle x^* y^*, J \rangle\,,$$

that shows that the pairing

$$(S_G^*)^n \times (S_G^*)^{N-n} \to (S_G^*)^N\,, \quad (x, y) \mapsto xy$$

is a duality.

(2) The map

$$S_G^* \to \mathrm{Hom}_k(S_G^*, k)\,, \quad a \mapsto [b \mapsto \langle a, bJ \rangle = D(ab)(J)(0)]$$

is indeed an isomorphism of k–vector spaces, which sends an homogeneous element a to an homogeneous element with degree $\deg a - N$.

Let compute its behaviour under G–action. We have

$$g(a) \mapsto [b \mapsto \langle g(a)b, J\rangle] \,.$$

But

$$\langle g(a)b, J\rangle = \langle g(ag^{-1}(b), J\rangle) = \det_V(g)\langle g(ag^{-1}(b), g(J)\rangle = \det_V(g)\langle ag^{-1}(b), J\rangle$$

proving what we announced.

A finite dimensional graded k–algebra A equipped with an isomorphism of A–modules

$$A \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathrm{Hom}_k(A, k)[M]$$

for some integer M is called a *Poincaré duality algebra*.

Remark 4.26. The isomorphism of G–modules described in 4.25, (2) can be detected on the graded character of S^*_G. Indeed, we have

$$\mathrm{grchar}_{S^*_G}(g, q) = \frac{\prod_{i-1}^{i=r}(1 - q^{d_i})}{\det_V(1 - g^{-1}q)} \,.$$

hence

$$\mathrm{grchar}_{S^*_G}(g, q))\det_V(g^{-1}) = \frac{\prod_{i-1}^{i=r}(1 - q^{d_i})}{\det_V(g - q)} \,,$$

and since $N^{\mathrm{ref}} = (d_1 + d_2 + \cdots + d_r) - r$, we get

$$\begin{aligned}
\mathrm{grchar}_{S^*_G}(g, q)\det_V(g^{-1}) &= q^{N^{\mathrm{ref}}} \frac{\prod_{i=1}^{i=r}(q^{-d_i} - 1)}{\det_V(gq^{-1} - 1)} = q^{N^{\mathrm{ref}}} \frac{\prod_{i=1}^{i=r}(1 - q^{-d_i})}{\det_V(1 - gq^{-1})} \\
&= q^{N^{\mathrm{ref}}} \mathrm{grchar}_{S^*G}(g^{-1}, q^{-1}) \\
&= q^{N^{\mathrm{ref}}} \mathrm{grchar}_{\mathrm{Hom}_k(S^*, k)}(g, q) \,.
\end{aligned}$$

4.4 Application to Braid Groups

4.4.1 Discriminants and Length

Let $\mathfrak{p}$ be an orbit of G on $\mathcal{A}$. Recall that we denote by $e_{\mathfrak{p}}$ the (common) order of the pointwise stabilizer $G(H)$ for $H \in \mathfrak{p}$. We call *discriminant at* $\mathfrak{p}$ and we denote by $\Delta^*_{\mathfrak{p}}$ the element of the symmetric algebra of V^* defined (up to a non zero scalar multiplication) by

$$\Delta^*_{\mathfrak{p}} := (\prod_{H \in \mathfrak{p}} j^*_H)^{e_{\mathfrak{p}}} \,.$$

Since (see 3.11) $\Delta_{\mathfrak{p}}^*$ is G-invariant, it induces a continuous function $\Delta_{\mathfrak{p}}^* : V^{\mathrm{reg}}/G \to \mathbb{C}^\times$, hence induces a group homomorphism

$$\Pi_1(\Delta_{\mathfrak{p}}^*) : B \to \mathbb{Z}\,.$$

Lemma 4.27. *For any $H \in \mathcal{A}$, we have*

$$\Pi_1(\Delta_{\mathfrak{p}}^*)(\mathbf{s}_{H,\gamma}) = \begin{cases} 1 & \text{if } H \in \mathfrak{p}\,, \\ 0 & \text{if } H \notin \mathfrak{p}\,. \end{cases}$$

What precedes allows us to define length functions on B.

• There is a unique length functions $l : B \to \mathbb{Z}$ defined as follows ([BrMaRo], Prop. 2.19): if $b = \mathbf{s}_1^{n_1} \cdot \mathbf{s}_2^{n_2} \cdots \mathbf{s}_m^{n_m}$ where (for all j) $n_j \in \mathbb{Z}$ and $\mathbf{s}_j$ is a distinguished braid reflection around an element of $\mathcal{A}$ in B, then

$$\ell(b) = n_1 + n_2 + \cdots + n_m\,.$$

Indeed, we set $\ell := \Pi_1(\delta)$. Let $b \in B$. By Theorem 4.15 above, there exists an integer k and for $1 \le j \le k$, $H_j \in \mathcal{A}$, a path γ_j from x_0 to H_j and an integer n_j such that

$$b = \mathbf{s}_{H_1,\gamma_1}^{n_1} \mathbf{s}_{H_2,\gamma_2}^{n_2} \cdots \mathbf{s}_{H_k,\gamma_k}^{n_k}\,.$$

From Proposition 4.27 above, it then results that we have $\ell(b) = \sum_{j=1}^{j=k} n_j$.

If $\{\mathbf{s}\}$ is a set of distinguished braid reflections around hyperplanes which generates B, let us denote by B^+ the sub–monoid of B generated by $\{\mathbf{s}\}$. Then for $b \in B^+$, its length $\ell(b)$ coincide with its length on the distinguished set of generators $\{\mathbf{s}\}$ of the monoid B^+.

• More generally, given $\mathfrak{p} \in \mathcal{A}/G$, there is a unique length function $\ell_{\mathfrak{p}} : B \to \mathbb{Z}$ (this is the function denoted by $\Pi_1(\delta_{\mathfrak{p}})$ in [BrMaRo], see Prop. 2.16 in *loc.cit.*) defined as follows: if $b = \mathbf{s}_1^{n_1} \cdot \mathbf{s}_2^{n_2} \cdots \mathbf{s}_m^{n_m}$ where (for all j) $n_j \in \mathbb{Z}$ and $\mathbf{s}_j$ is a distinguished braid reflection around an element of $\mathfrak{p}_j$, then

$$\ell_{\mathfrak{p}}(b) = \sum_{\{j \mid (\mathfrak{p}_j = \mathfrak{p})\}} n_j\,.$$

Thus we have, for all $b \in B$,

$$\ell(b) = \sum_{\mathfrak{p} \in \mathcal{A}/G} \ell_{\mathfrak{p}}(b)\,.$$

Proposition 4.28. *We denote by B^{ab} the largest abelian quotient of B. For $\mathfrak{p} \in \mathcal{A}/G$, we denote by $\mathbf{s}_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{ab}}$ the image of $\mathbf{s}_{H,\gamma}$ in B^{ab} for $H \in \mathfrak{p}$. Then*

$$B^{\mathrm{ab}} = \prod_{\mathfrak{p} \in \mathcal{A}/G} \langle \mathbf{s}_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{ab}} \rangle\,,$$

where each $\langle \mathbf{s}_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{ab}} \rangle$ is infinite cyclic.

Dually, we have

$$\operatorname{Hom}(B,\mathbb{Z}) = \prod_{\mathfrak{p}\in\mathcal{A}/G} \langle \Pi_1(\Delta_{\mathfrak{p}}^*)\rangle\,.$$

4.4.2 Complement: Artin-Like Presentations of the Braid Diagrams

General Results

Following Opdam, we say that B has an *Artin–like* presentation if it has a presentation of the form

$$\langle \mathbf{s}\in\mathbf{S} \mid \{\mathbf{v}_i=\mathbf{w}_i\}_{i\in I}\rangle$$

where $\mathbf{S}$ is a finite set of distinguished braid reflections, and I is a finite set of relations which are multi–homogeneous, *i.e.*, such that (for each i) $\mathbf{v}_i$ and $\mathbf{w}_i$ are positive words in elements of $\mathbf{S}$ (and hence, for each $\mathfrak{p}\in\mathcal{A}/W$, we have $\ell_{\mathfrak{p}}(\mathbf{v}_i)=\ell_{\mathfrak{p}}(\mathbf{w}_i)$).

The following result is mainly due to Bessis (cf. [Bes3], 4.2 and also [BrMaRo] and [BeMi] for case–by–case results).

Theorem 4.29. *Let $G\subset \mathrm{GL}(V)$ be a complex reflection group. Let $(d_1,d_2,\dots,d_r)$ be the family of its invariant degrees, ordered to that $d_1\le d_2\le\cdots\le d_r$.*

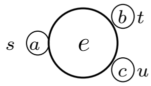
1. *The following integers are equal.*
   a) *The minimal number of reflections needed to generate G.*
   b) *The minimal number of braid reflections needed to generate B.*
   c) $\lceil (N+N^{\mathrm{hyp}})/d_r\rceil$.
2. *If Γ_G denotes the integer defined by properties (a) to (c) above, we have either $\Gamma_G=r$ or $\Gamma_G=r+1$, and the group B has an Artin–like presentation by Γ_G braid reflections.*

The Braid Diagrams

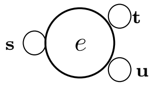
Let us first introduce some more notation.

As previously, we set $V^{\mathrm{reg}}:=V-\bigcup_{H\in\mathcal{A}}H$, $B:=\Pi_1(V^{\mathrm{reg}}/G,x_0)$, and we denote by $\sigma\mapsto\overline{\sigma}$ the morphism $B\twoheadrightarrow G$ defined by the Galois covering $V^{\mathrm{reg}}\twoheadrightarrow V^{\mathrm{reg}}/G$.

Let $\mathcal{D}$ be one of the diagrams given in tables 1 to 4 of the Appendix (see below) symbolizing a set of relations as described in Appendix.

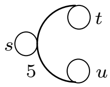
• We denote by $\mathcal{D}_{\mathrm{br}}$ and we call *braid diagram associated to* $\mathcal{D}$ the set of nodes of $\mathcal{D}$ subject to all relations of $\mathcal{D}$ but the orders of the nodes, and we represent the braid diagram $\mathcal{D}_{\mathrm{br}}$ by the same picture as $\mathcal{D}$ where numbers insides the nodes are omitted. Thus, if $\mathcal{D}$ is the diagram 

,

then $\mathcal{D}_{\mathrm{br}}$ is the diagram 

and represents the relations

$$\underbrace{stustu\cdots}_{e\text{ factors}} = \underbrace{tustus\cdots}_{e\text{ factors}} = \underbrace{ustust\cdots}_{e\text{ factors}}\,.$$

Note that this braid diagram for $e = 3$ is the braid diagram associated to $G(2d, 2, 2)$ $(d \geq 2)$, as well as G_7, G_{11}, G_{19}. Also, for $e = 4$, this is the braid diagram associated to G_{12} and for $e = 5$, the braid diagram associated to G_{22}. Similarly, the braid diagram 

is associated to the diagrams of both G_{15} and $G(4d, 4, 2)$.

The following statement is well known for Coxeter groups (see for example [Del]). It has been noticed by Orlik and Solomon (see [OrSo3], 3.7) for the case of non real Shephard groups (*i.e.*, non real complex reflection groups whose braid diagram – see above – is a Coxeter diagram). It has been proved for all the infinite series, as well as checked case by case for all the exceptional groups but G_{24}, G_{27}, G_{29}, G_{31}, G_{33}, G_{34} in [BrMaMi]. The remaining cases have been treated by Bessis–Michel ([BeMi]) and by Bessis ([Bes3]).

Conjecture 4.30. Let G be a finite irreducible complex reflection group.

Let $\mathcal{N}(\mathcal{D})$ be the set of nodes of the diagram $\mathcal{D}$ for G given in tables 1–4 of the appendix, identified with a set of distinguished reflections in G. For each $s \in \mathcal{N}(\mathcal{D})$, there exists an s–distinguished braid reflection $\mathbf{s}$ in B such that the set $\{\mathbf{s}\}_{s\in\mathcal{N}(\mathcal{D})}$, together with the braid relations of $\mathcal{D}_{\mathrm{br}}$, is a presentation of B.

4.5 Graded Multiplicities and Solomon's Theorem

4.5.1 Preliminary: Graded Dimension of $(S \otimes V)^G$

The S–module $S \otimes_k V$ is a free (graded) S–module of rank r, hence a free R–module of rank $|G|r$. It is also endowed with an action of G (defined by $g.(x \otimes v) := gx \otimes gv$).

The graded vector space $(S \otimes V)^G$ of fixed points under G is the image of the projector $(1/|G|) \sum_{g \in G} g$, hence is also a free (graded) R–module, and we have

$$(S \otimes V)^G = R \otimes_k (S_G \otimes V)^G \,,$$

where $(S_G \otimes V)^G$ is a finite dimensional graded vector space, which we shall describe now.

The Differential $d : S \to S \otimes V$

It is easy to check that the map

$$d : S^1 = V \to S \otimes V, \quad v \mapsto dv := 1 \otimes v$$

extends uniquely to a k–linear derivation of S–modules $d : S \to S \otimes V$, *i.e.*, it satisfies

$$d(xy) = xd(y) + d(x)y \quad \text{for } x, y \in S \,.$$

That derivation has degree -1, and it is such that, whenever $(v_1, v_2, \ldots, v_r)$ is a basis of V, we have

$$dx = \sum_{i=1}^{i=r} \frac{\partial x}{\partial v_i} dx_i \,.$$

The map d in injective. Indeed, let us consider the product

$$\mu : S \otimes V \to S, \quad x \otimes v \mapsto xv \,.$$

That S–linear map has degree $+1$, and $\mu \cdot d : S \to S$ is an automorphism of S since, whenever x is a homogeneous element, we have $\mu \cdot d(x) = \deg(x) x$.

Finally the maps d and μ commute with the action of G hence they define

$$d : R \to (S \otimes V)^G \quad \text{and} \quad \mu : (S \otimes V)^G \to R \,.$$

Proposition 4.31.

1. *The map d induces an isomorphism of graded vector spaces*

$$d : \mathfrak{M}/\mathfrak{M}^2 \xrightarrow{\sim} (S_G \otimes V)^G[1] \,.$$

2. *We have*

$$\operatorname{grdim}((S_G \otimes V)^G) = q^{d_1 - 1} + q^{d_2 - 1} + \cdots + q^{d_r - 1} \,.$$

Proof (of 4.31).

(1) Let us first check that the vector spaces $\mathfrak{M}/\mathfrak{M}^2$ and $(S_G \otimes V)^G$ have both dimension r.

- We know that the dimension of $\mathfrak{M}/\mathfrak{M}^2$ equals the Krull dimension of R, hence equals r.
- If we forget the graduation, $(S_G \otimes V)^G$ is isomorphic to $(kG \otimes V)^G$, hence its dimension is $\dfrac{1}{|G|} \sum_{g \in G} \chi_{kG}(g) \chi_V(g) = \chi_V(1) = r$.

Since d is a derivation, it sends $\mathfrak{M}^2$ into $\mathfrak{M}(S \otimes V)^G$, hence induces a morphism of graded vector spaces:

$$d : \mathfrak{M}/\mathfrak{M}^2 \xrightarrow{\sim} (S_G \otimes V)^G[1] .$$

Since that map is injective, it is an isomorphism.

(2) is an immediate consequence of (1), since $\mathrm{grdim}(\mathfrak{M}/\mathfrak{M}^2) = q^{d_1} + q^{d_2} + \cdots + q^{d_r}$.

4.5.2 Exponents and Gutkin–Opdam Matrices

To conform ourselves with the usual notation, we switch from the study of the symmetric algebra S of V to the study of the symmetric algebra S^* of V^*. We view S^* as the algebra of algebraic functions (polynomials !) on the algebraic variety V, hence we set $k[V] := S^*$. We introduce the following complementary notation for the invariant and coinvariant algebras:

$$R^* := k[V]^G \quad \text{and} \quad k[V]_G = S^*_G = S^*/\mathfrak{M}^* S^* = k \otimes_{k[V]^G} k[V] .$$

Multiplicity Module, Fake Degree, Exponents

Let X be any kG–module, with dimension denoted by d_X.

The $k[V]^G$–module $(k[V] \otimes_k X^*)^G$ is a direct summand of $k[V] \otimes_k X^*$, hence is free. It follows that

$$(k[V] \otimes_k X^*)^G = k[V]^G \otimes_k \mathrm{Mult}(X) \tag{4.5}$$

where

$$\mathrm{Mult}(X) := (k[V] \otimes_k X^*)^G / \mathfrak{M}^* (k[V] \otimes_k X^*)^G = (k[V]_G \otimes_k X^*)^G .$$

Thus $\mathrm{Mult}(X)$ is a finite dimensional graded vector space.

Definition 4.32.

- The graded dimension of $\mathrm{Mult}(X)$ is called the *fake degree of* X and is denoted by
$$\mathrm{Feg}_X(q) := \mathrm{grdim}\mathrm{Mult}(X) .$$

- The family of *exponents of* X is the family of integers $(e_i(X))_{1\leq i\leq d_X}$ defined by
$$\mathrm{Feg}_X(q) = q^{e_1(X)} + q^{e_2(X)} + \cdots + q^{e_{d_X}(X)}\,.$$
- *We set*
$$E(X) := \frac{d}{dq}\mathrm{Feg}_X(q)_{|_{q=1}} = e_1(X) + e_2(X) + \cdots + e_{d_X}(X)\,.$$

Let χ denote the character of the kG–module X. Then by 4.5 we have

$$\mathrm{Feg}_X(q) = \frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G}\frac{\chi(g)^*}{\det_V(1-gq)^*}\prod_{i=1}^{i=r}(q^{d_i}-1)\,.$$

The following property shows that $E(X)$ is "local", *i.e.*, may be computed from the fixators of reflecting hyperplanes.

Proposition 4.33. *We have*

$$E(X) = \sum_{H\in\mathcal{A}} E(\mathrm{Res}^G_{G(H)}X)\,.$$

Proof (of 4.33). Let us set

$$\frac{\mathrm{Feg}_X(q)}{\prod_{i=1}^{i=r}(q^{d_i}-1)} = \frac{\chi(1)}{|G|}\frac{1}{(q-1)^r} + \frac{\gamma(X)}{2|G|}\frac{1}{(q-1)^{r-1}} + \cdots\,.$$

We know from 3.29, (1), that $\gamma(X)$ is local. But it also results from 3.32, 4), that
$$\gamma(X) = \chi(1)|\mathrm{Ref}(G)| - 2E(X)\,,$$
which shows that $E(X)$ is local.

$\boldsymbol{E(X)}$ and $\boldsymbol{E(\det_X)}$

Let us compute $E(\mathrm{Res}^G_{G(H)}X)$.

Since the degree of X is d_X, and since the irreducible characters of $G(H)$ are powers of $\det_{V^*}$, there is a family $(m_{H,1}(X), m_{H,2}(X), \dots, m_{H,d_X}(X))$ of integers such that $0 \leq m_{H,n}(X) \leq e_H - 1$ and

$$\mathrm{Res}^G_{G(H)}\chi = \sum_{n=1}^{n=d_X}\det\nolimits_{V^*}^{m_{H,n}(X)}\,.$$

It follows from 4.20 that

$$\mathrm{Feg}_{\det_{V^*}}(q) = q\,, \text{ hence } \quad \mathrm{Feg}_{\det_{V^*}^{m_{H,n}(X)}}(q) = q^{m_{H,n}(X)}\,,$$

and it follows that

$$\mathrm{Feg}_{\mathrm{Res}^G_{G(H)} X}(q) = \sum_{n=1}^{n=d_X} q^{m_{H,n}(X)}\,. \tag{4.6}$$

Hence we have

$$E(\mathrm{Res}^G_{G(H)} X) = \sum_{n=1}^{n=d_X} m_{H,n}(X) \quad \text{and} \quad E(X) = \sum_{H \in \mathcal{A}} \sum_{n=1}^{n=d_X} m_{H,n}(X)\,.$$

Notice that the preceding notation means that there exists a basis of the k-vector space X^* on which the matrix of s_H is the diagonal matrix with spectrum

$$(\zeta_H^{m_{H,1}(X)}, \zeta_H^{m_{H,2}(X)}, \dots, \zeta_H^{m_{H,d_X}(X)})\,.$$

In particular we have $\det_X(s_H) = \zeta_H^{E(X)}$.

The following proposition follows from what precedes.

Proposition 4.34.

1. *The integer $E(\mathrm{Res}^G_{G(H)} X)$ depends only on the orbit $\mathfrak{p}$ of H under G, and for all $H \in \mathfrak{p}$ we have*

$$E(\mathrm{Res}^G_{G(H)} X) = e_{\mathfrak{p}} m_{\mathfrak{p}} + E(\mathrm{Res}^G_{G(H)} \det_X)$$
$$\textit{where} \quad 0 \le E(\mathrm{Res}^G_{G(H)} \det_X) < e_{\mathfrak{p}} \quad \textit{and} \quad m_{\mathfrak{p}} \in \mathbb{N}\,.$$

2. *If the reflections of G acts trivially or as reflections on X, we have*

$$E(\det_X) = E(X)\,.$$

3. *We have*

$$E(V) = \sum_{H \in \mathcal{A}} e_H - 1 = N^{\mathrm{ref}} \quad \textit{and} \quad E(V^*) = \sum_{H \in \mathcal{A}} 1 = N^{\mathrm{hyp}}\,.$$

The Gutkin–Opdam Matrix

Let us go on along the lines of the preceding analysis.

Let us choose a basis $(\mu_1, \mu_2, \dots, \mu_{d_X})$ of $\mathrm{Mult}(X)$ consisting of homogeneous elements of degrees respectively $e_1(X), e_2(X), \dots, e_{d_X}(X)$. We may view them as elements of $k[V]^G \otimes_k \mathrm{Mult}(X) = (k[V] \otimes_k X^*)^G$ with the same degrees.

Thus these elements belong to $k[V] \otimes_k X^*$, and if $(\xi_1, \xi_2, \ldots, \xi_{d_X})$ is a basis of X^*, we get a matrix $J_X = (j_{\alpha,\beta}(X))_{1 \leq \alpha,\beta \leq d_X}$, with entries in $k[V]$, each element $j_{\alpha,\beta}(X)$ being homogeneous of degree $e_\beta(X)$, defined by

$$\mu_\beta = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{\alpha=d_X} j_{\alpha,\beta}(X)\xi_\alpha \, ,$$

i.e., we have the following identity between matrices

$$(\mu_1, \mu_2, \ldots, \mu_{d_X}) = (\xi_1, \xi_2, \ldots, \xi_{d_X}).J_X \, .$$

In other words, J_X is the matrix (written over the basis $(\xi_1, \xi_2, \ldots, \xi_{d_X})$) of the endomorphism of the $k[V]$–module which sends the basis $(\xi_1, \xi_2, \ldots, \xi_{d_X})$ onto the system $(\mu_1, \mu_2, \ldots, \mu_{d_X})$.

Notice that all entries of the i-th column of J_X are homogeneous of degree $e_i(X)$.

Definition 4.35. *The matrix J_X is called the* Gutkin–Opdam matrix.

Remark 4.36. The matrix J_X has been introduced by Gutkin in [Gut], where the first assertion of theorem 4.38 below is proved. Opdam pursued the study of J_X in [Op1].

Let us denote by $\rho_{X^*}(g)$ the matrix of g written on the basis $(\xi_1, \xi_2, \ldots, \xi_{d_X})$, *i.e.*,

$$\begin{pmatrix} g(\xi_1) \\ g(\xi_2) \\ \vdots \\ g(\xi_{d_X}) \end{pmatrix} = \rho_{X^*}(g) \begin{pmatrix} \xi_1 \\ \xi_2 \\ \vdots \\ \xi_{d_X} \end{pmatrix} .$$

Since $\mu_\alpha \in (k[V] \otimes_k X^*)^G$, we see that

$$(\forall g \in G) \, , \; g(J_X) = {}^t\rho_{X^*}(g^{-1}) J_X \, ,$$

hence

$$(\forall g \in G) \, , \; g(J_X) = \rho_X(g) J_X \, ,$$

where $\rho_X(g)$ is the matrix (computed on the dual basis of $(\xi_1, \xi_2, \ldots, \xi_{d_X})$) of the operation of g on X.

The following lemma is straightforward.

Lemma 4.37. *For $j = 1, 2, \ldots, d_X$, let us denote by $J_{X,j}$ the k–subspace of $k[V]$ generated by the entries in the j-th column of the matrix J_X.*

1. *$J_{X,j}$ is stable under the action of G, and a homomorphic image of X as a kG–module.*
2. *If X is irreducible, then the kG–module $J_{X,j}$ is isomorphic to X.*

Theorem 4.38.

1. $\det(J_X) \neq 0$ *and more precisely we have (up to a nonzero scalar)*

$$\det(J_X) = \prod_{H\in\mathcal{A}} {j_H^*}^{E(\mathrm{Res}^G_{G(H)} X)}\,.$$

2. *We have* $\det(J_X) \in k[V]^G j^*_{\det_{X^*}}$, *and more precisely*

$$\det J_X = \left(\prod_{\mathfrak{p}\in\mathcal{A}/G} \Delta_{\mathfrak{p}}^{m_{\mathfrak{p}}}\right) j^*_{\det_{X^*}} \quad \textit{for some integers } m_{\mathfrak{p}}\,.$$

3. *For* $g \in G$, *let* $\rho_X(g)$ *denote the matrix of the operation of* g *on* X *computed on the dual basis of* $(\xi_1, \xi_2, \ldots, \xi_{d_X})$. *Let* $M \in \mathrm{Mat}_{d_X}(k[V])$. *The following two conditions are equivalent:*
   (i) $\forall g \in G\,,\ g(M) = \rho_X(g)M\,,$
   (ii) $M \in J_X \mathrm{Mat}_{d_X}(k[V]^G)\,.$
4. *If* X *is absolutely irreducible, the* X*–isotypic component* $k[V]_X$ *of* $k[V]$ *is equal to the* $k[V]^G$*–module generated by the entries of* J_X, *which we abbreviate into the equality*

$$k[V]_X = J_X \mathrm{Mat}_{d_X}(k[V]^G)\,.$$

Remark 4.39. One may notice that the assertions 3, 4, 5 of the above theorem specialize to Stanley's theorem [Sta]:

$$k[V]_\theta = k[V]^G j^*_\theta$$

for X a linear character θ.

Proof (of 4.38).
(a) Let us first prove that $\det(J_X) \neq 0$.

Choose a regular element $v \in V^{\mathrm{reg}}$, and choose a G–stable subspace H of $k[V]$ complementary to $\mathfrak{M}^* k[V]$, thus $H \oplus \mathfrak{M}^* k[V] = k[V]$, H is a finite dimensional graded vector space, isomorphic to $k[V]_G$, and the multiplication induces an isomorphism of graded vector spaces

$$k[V]^G \otimes_k H \xrightarrow{\sim} k[V]\,.$$

Lemma 4.40. *The* k*–linear map*

$$\iota_v : \begin{cases} H \otimes X^* \to X^* \\ h \otimes \xi \mapsto h(v)\xi \end{cases}$$

induces a k–linear isomorphism

$$\iota_v : (H \otimes X^*)^G \xrightarrow{\sim} X^* \,.$$

Proof (of 4.40). The vector space $(H \otimes X^*)^G$ has the same dimension as X^* since H is isomorphic to the regular module kG. Hence it suffices to prove that ι_v is onto.

Let $G.v$ denote the orbit of v under G. Since v is regular, that orbit has cardinality $|G|$. By Lagrange interpolation theorem, the any k–valued function on the finite set $G.v$ is the restriction of a polynomial function on V, *i.e.*, of the form $x \mapsto f(x)$ for $f \in k[V]$. Since $k[V] = k[V]^G \otimes_k H$ and since $k[V]^G$ defines the constant functions on $G.v$, it follows that any function on $G.v$ is of the form $x \mapsto h(x)$ for some $h \in H$.

In particular, there exists $h_v \in H$ such that $h_v(g(v)) = \delta_{g,1}$.

Let $\xi \in X^*$. Consider the element $\sum_{g \in G} g(h_v) \otimes g(\xi) \in (H \otimes X^*)^G$. Its image under ι_v is ξ, proving the desired surjectivity.

Consider now the k–linear automorphism of X^* defined as the composition of the two k–linear isomorphisms

$$\begin{cases} X^* \to (H \otimes_k X^*)^G \\ \xi_\alpha \mapsto \mu_\alpha \end{cases} \quad \text{and} \quad \iota_v : (H \otimes_k X^*)^G \to X^* \,,$$

thus defined by

$$\xi_\beta \mapsto \sum_{\alpha=1}^{\alpha=d_X} j_{\alpha,\beta}(v)\xi_\alpha \,.$$

The determinant of that automorphism is

$$\det(j_{\alpha,\beta}(v))_{\alpha,\beta} = (\det J_X)(v) \,,$$

which shows indeed that $\det J_X \neq 0$.

(b) Choose $H \in \mathcal{A}$. We shall first describe the matrix $J_{\mathrm{Res}^G_{G(H)} X}$ since it will be used again later.

Since

$$\mathrm{Res}^G_{G(H)} X \simeq \bigoplus_{n=1}^{n=d_X} \det_{V^*}^{m_{H,n}(X)}$$

there is a basis $(\psi_1, \ldots, \psi_{d_X})$ of X^* such that, for all $n = 1, \ldots, d_X$,

$$g.\psi_n = \det_{V^*}^{m_{H,n}}(g)\psi_n \,.$$

Then the family

$$\left(j_{H^*}^{m_{H,1}} \psi_1, \ldots, j_{H^*}^{m_{H,d_X}} \psi_{d_X} \right)$$

is a homogeneous basis of $(k[V] \otimes_k X^*)^{G(H)}$ over $k[V]^{G(H)}$ (hence defines a homogeneous basis of $\mathrm{Mult}(\mathrm{Res}_{G(H)}^G X)$).

Let us denote by $J_{\mathrm{Res}_{G(H)}^G X}$ is the diagonal matrix with diagonal entries $(j_{H^*}^{m_{H,1}}, \dots, j_{H^*}^{m_{H,d_X}})$, which is such that

$$(j_{H^*}^{m_{H,1}} \psi_1, \dots, j_{H^*}^{m_{H,d_X}} \psi_{d_X}) = (\psi_1, \dots, \psi_{d_X}) J_{\mathrm{Res}_{G(H)}^G X} \, .$$

We define the matrix $I_H \in \mathrm{GL}_{d_X}(k)$ by the condition

$$(\psi_1, \dots, \psi_{d_X}) = (\xi_1, \dots, \xi_{d_X}) I_H \, ,$$

(c) The following lemma will be used in what follows.

Lemma 4.41. *Let $M \in \mathrm{Mat}_{d_X}(k[V])$ be such that*

$$\forall g \in G \, , \, g(M) = \rho_X(g).M \, .$$

Then there exists a matrix $F_H(M) \in \mathrm{Mat}_{d_X}(k[V]^G)$ such that

$$M = I_H J_{\mathrm{Res}_{G(H)}^G X} F_H(M) \, .$$

Proof (of 4.41). Let $M \in \mathrm{Mat}_{d_X}(k[V])$ be such that $\forall g \in G \, , \, g(M) = \rho_X(g).M$.

Then the family $(\nu_1, \dots, \nu_{d_X})$ of elements of $k[V] \otimes X$ defined by the equality

$$(\nu_1, \dots, \nu_{d_X}) = (\xi_1, \dots, \xi_{d_X}) M$$

consists actually of elements of $(k[V] \otimes_k X^*)^G$.

Since

$$(k[V] \otimes_k X^*)^G \subset (k[V] \otimes_k X^*)^{G(H)} \, ,$$

there exists a matrix $F_H(M) \in \mathrm{Mat}_{d_X}(k[V]^{G(H)})$ such that

$$(\nu_1, \dots, \nu_{d_X}) = (j_{H^*}^{m_{H,1}} \psi_1, \dots, j_{H^*}^{m_{H,d_X}} \psi_{d_X}) F_H(M) \, .$$

Thus we have

$$(\xi_1, \dots, \xi_{d_X}) M = (\xi_1, \dots, \xi_{d_X}) I_H J_{\mathrm{Res}_{G(H)}^G X} F_H(M)$$

which proves lemma 4.41.

(d) Let us now prove (1).

Since for all α, $j_{\alpha,\beta}(X)$ is homogeneous of degree $e_\beta(X)$, we see that $\det J_X$ has degree $\sum_\beta e_\beta(X) = E(X)$. By 4.33, we see that $\det J_X$ and $\prod_{H \in \mathcal{A}} (j_H^*)^{E(\mathrm{Res}_{G(H)}^G X)}$ have the same degree. Thus it suffices to prove that, whenever $H \in \mathcal{A}$, then $(j_H^*)^{E(\mathrm{Res}_{G(H)}^G X)}$ divides $\det J_X$.

It follows from 4.41 that

$$\det J_X = \det I_H \det J_{\mathrm{Res}^G_{G(H)} X} \det F_H(J_X)$$

hence that $\det J_X$ is divisible by

$$\det J_{\mathrm{Res}^G_{G(H)} X} = \prod_{n=1}^{n=d_X} {j_H^*}^{m_{H,n}(X)} = {j_H^*}^{E(X)}.$$

(e) Let us prove (2).

Since (see 4.34)

$$E(\mathrm{Res}^G_{G(H)} X) = e_{\mathfrak{p}} m_{\mathfrak{p}} + E\left(\mathrm{Res}^G_{G(H)} \det_X\right),$$

we have

$$(j_H^*)^{E(\mathrm{Res}^G_{G(H)} X)} = (j_H^*)^{e_{\mathfrak{p}} m_{\mathfrak{p}}} (j_H^*)^{E\left(\mathrm{Res}^G_{G(H)} \det_X\right)}$$

hence

$$\det J_X = \prod_{\mathfrak{p} \mathcal{A}/G} (\Delta_{\mathfrak{p}}^*)^{m_{\mathfrak{p}}} j^*_{\det_{X^*}}.$$

Remark 4.42. One might have noticed that the relation

$$g(J_X) = \rho_X(g) J_X$$

implies

$$g(\det J_X) = \det_X(g) \det J_X,$$

hence that $\det J_X$ is indeed divisible by $j^*_{\det_{X^*}}$.

(f) Let us prove (3).

It is clear that (i) implies (ii). Let us prove the converse. So let $M \in \mathrm{Mat}_{d_X}(k[V])$ be such that $\forall g \in G$, $g(M) = \rho_X(g) M$.

By 4.41, we see that

$$M = I_H J_{\mathrm{Res}^G_{G(H)} X} F_H(M) \quad \text{and} \quad J_X = I_H J_{\mathrm{Res}^G_{G(H)} X} F_H(J_X),$$

hence

$$J_X^{-1} M = F_H(J_X)^{-1} F_H(M).$$

That equality shows that $J_X^{-1} M$ is invariant by $G(H)$ for all H, hence that $J_X^{-1} M \in \mathrm{Mat}_{d_X}(k(V)^G)$.

But (using notation of the proof of lemma 4.41 above), we have

$$(\nu_1, \ldots, \nu_{d_X}) = (\mu_1, \ldots, \mu_{d_X}) J_X^{-1} M,$$

and since $(\mu_1, \ldots, \mu_{d_X})$ is a basis of $(k[V] \otimes_k X^*)^G$ over $k[V]^G$, we see that in fact $J_X^{-1} M \in \mathrm{Mat}_{d_X}(k[V]^G)$.

(g) Let us prove (4).

Assume that X is an absolutely irreducible kG–module. Then there is a decomposition

$$kG = \bigoplus_{n=1}^{n=d_X} X_n$$

where each X_n is a kG–submodule of kG isomorphic to X.

As a consequence, there is a decomposition

$$k[V] = \bigoplus_{n=1}^{n=d_X} Y_n$$

into a direct sum of $k[V]^G$–submodules all isomorphic to $k[V]^G \otimes_k X$.

For each n, let us choose a basis $(m_{n,1}, \ldots, m_{n,d_X})$ of Y_n such that we have

$$\begin{pmatrix} g(m_{1,n}) \\ \vdots \\ g(m_{d_X,n}) \end{pmatrix} = \rho_X(g) \begin{pmatrix} m_{1,n} \\ \vdots \\ m_{d_X,n} \end{pmatrix} .$$

Then the matrix $M := (m_{i,j})$ has the following properties:

- For all $g \in G$, $g(M) = \rho_X(g)M$,
- The family of entries of M is a free system of elements of $k[V]$ over $k[V]^G$.

By the assertion 3 already proved, we see that $M \in J_X \mathrm{Mat}_{d_X}(k[V]^G)$, which implies that the family of entries of J_X is also a free system of elements of $k[V]$ over $k[V]^G$. Thus, denoting by J_n the $k[V]^G$–submodule of $k[V]$ generated by the n-th column of J_X, we see that

- For all n, J_n is a $k[V]^G G$–submodule isomorphic to $k[V]^G \otimes_k X$,
- $k[V] = \bigoplus_{n=1}^{n=d_X} J_n$,

and the family of entries of J_X is indeed a basis of the $k[V]^G \otimes_k X$–isotypic component of $k[V]$.

Remark 4.43.

1. It follows from the case-by-case analysis of [Bes1] that any irreducible kG–module is absolutely irreducible.
2. An *a priori* proof of the linear independence of the entries of J_X would provide a proof of the absolute irreducibility of X.

4.5.3 Solomon Theorem

Exterior Algebra and Bigrading

Let A be a graded k–algebra, and let M be a free graded A–module. Then the A–module $\Lambda_A(M)$ is naturally bigraded with the following rule: for $(x_1, x_2, \ldots, x_n)$ homogeneous elements of M with degrees respectively $(d_1, d_2, \ldots, d_n)$, we set

$$\mathrm{bideg}(x_1 \wedge x_2 \wedge \cdots \wedge x_n) = (\sum_{i=1}^{i=n} d_i\,,\, n)\,.$$

The bigraded dimension of $\Lambda_A(M)$ is the power series in two indeterminates x and y defined by the formula

$$\mathrm{bigrdim}\Lambda_A(M) := \sum_{m,n} \dim\Lambda_A(M)^{(m,n)} x^m y^n$$

(so x counts the grading of M while y counts the "exterior power grading"). More generally, if M is endowed with an action of a finite group G, we define the bigraded character of M by

$$\mathrm{bigrchar}_M(g) := \sum_{m,n} \mathrm{tr}(g, \Lambda_A(M)^{(m,n)}) x^m y^n\,.$$

In particular,

- if M is a finite dimensional graded k–module with $\mathrm{grdim}M = q^{e_1} + \cdots + q^{e_d}$, then

$$\mathrm{bigrdim}\Lambda(M) = (1 + yx^{e_1})(1 + yx^{e_2}) \cdots (1 + yx^{e_d})\,.$$

- If A is a graded k–algebra, and if we view $A \otimes_k M$ as graded by the product, then $\Lambda_A(A \otimes M) = A \otimes \Lambda(M)$ is bigraded as follows: for a an homogeneous element of A and $(x_1, x_2, \ldots, x_n)$ homogeneous elements of M, we set

$$\mathrm{bideg}(a(x_1 \wedge x_2 \wedge \cdots \wedge x_n)) = (\deg a + \sum_{i=1}^{i=n} \deg(x_i)\,,\, n)\,.$$

Theorem 4.44 (Solomon theorem). *Let X be a kG–module such that $E(X) = E(\det_X)$, i.e., such that* $\det J_X = j^*_{\det_{X^*}}$.

1. *The identity endomorphism of $(k[V] \otimes_k X^*)^G$, viewed as an isomorphism*

$$\Lambda^1_{k[V]^G}(k[V]^G \otimes_k \mathrm{Mult}X) \xrightarrow{\sim} (k[V] \otimes_k \Lambda^1(X)^*)^G\,,$$

extends uniquely to an isomorphism of bigraded $k[V]^G$–algebras

$$\Lambda_{k[V]^G}(k[V]^G \otimes_k \mathrm{Mult}X) \xrightarrow{\sim} (k[V] \otimes_k \Lambda(X)^*)^G)\,,$$

thus defining isomorphisms of bigraded algebras

$$\begin{cases} \Lambda_{k[V]^G}(k[V]^G \otimes_k \mathrm{Mult}X) \xrightarrow{\sim} (k[V]^G \otimes_k \mathrm{Mult}\Lambda X) \\ \Lambda\mathrm{Mult}X \simeq \mathrm{Mult}\Lambda X\,. \end{cases}$$

2. We have the following identities between power series

$$\frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G}\frac{\det_X(1+gy)}{\det_V(1-gx)} = \frac{(1+yx^{e_1(X)})(1+yx^{e_2(X)})\cdots(1+yx^{e_{d_X}(X)})}{(1-x^{d_1})(1-x^{d_2})\cdots(1-x^{d_r})}\,,$$

$$(1+yx^{e_1(X)})\cdots(1+yx^{e_{d_X}(X)}) = \sum_{n=1}^{n=d_X}\mathrm{grdimMult}(\Lambda^n(X))(x)y^n$$

In particular, we have

$$\mathrm{Feg}_{\Lambda^m(X)}(q) = \sum_{1\le i_1<i_2<\cdots<i_m\le d_X} q^{e_{i_1}(X)+e_{i_2}(X)+\cdots+e_{i_m}(X)}\,.$$

Proof (of 4.44).

(1) We keep using the notation introduced above. If $(\mu_1,\mu_2,\ldots,\mu_{d_X})$ is an homogeneous basis of $\mathrm{Mult}(X)$, hence a homogeneous $k[V]^G$–basis of $(k[V]\otimes X^*)^G$, it suffices to prove that, if for $I=(i_1<i_2<\cdots<i_n)$ a subset of $(1,2,\ldots,d_X)$ we set $\mu_I := \mu_{i_1}\wedge\mu_{i_2}\wedge\cdots\wedge\mu_{i_{d_X}}$, then the family $(\mu_I)_I$ (a $k[V]^G$–basis of $\Lambda_{k[V]^G}(k[V]^G\otimes_k \mathrm{Mult}X)$), defines a $k[V]^G$–basis of $(k[V]\otimes_k\Lambda(X^*))^G$.

For I as above, let us denote by I' its complementary subset in $(1,2,\ldots,d_X)$, and let us set $\boldsymbol{\mu} := \mu_1\wedge\mu_2\wedge\cdots\wedge\mu_{d_X}$, so that $\mu_I\mu_{I'} = \pm\boldsymbol{\mu}$. Notice that $\boldsymbol{\mu}\neq 0$ since $\boldsymbol{\mu} = \det J_X(\xi_1\wedge\xi_2\wedge\cdots\wedge\xi_{d_X})$ and $\det J_X\neq 0$.

Let us denote by K the field of fractions of $k[V]^G$ and by L the field of fractions of $k[V]$.

• Let us first check that the family $(\mu_I)_I$ is free over $k[V]$.

Indeed, given a linear combination $\sum_J f_I\mu_I$ where $f_J\in k[V]$, we can pick an I, multiply that linear combination by $\mu_{I'}$, which gives $f_I\boldsymbol{\mu}=0$, whence $f_I=0$.

• Let us now check that the family $(\mu_I)_I$ generates $(k[V]\otimes_k\Lambda(X)^*)^G)$ as a $k[V]^G$–module.

The family $(\mu_I)_I$ is a basis of $\Lambda_L(L\otimes X^*)$, hence whenever $\alpha\in(k[V]\otimes_k \Lambda(X)^*)^G)$, there are elements $\alpha_I\in K$ such that $\alpha=\sum_I\alpha_I\mu_I$. Applying the projector $1/|G|\sum_{g\in G} g$ shows that $\alpha_I\in L^G = K$.

Picking an I and multiplying by $\mu_{I'}$ gives

$$\alpha\mu_{I'} = \alpha_I\boldsymbol{\mu} = \alpha_I\det J_X(\xi_1\wedge\xi_2\wedge\cdots\wedge\xi_{d_X})\,.$$

We see that the element $\beta_I := \alpha_I \mathrm{det} J_X$ belongs to $k[V]$, and that $g(\beta_I) = \mathrm{det}_{X^*}(g)\beta_I$. It follows that $\beta_I \in k[V]^G j^*_{\mathrm{det}_{X^*}}$.

By hypothesis we have $\mathrm{det} J_X = j^*_{\mathrm{det}_{X^*}}$. This shows that $\alpha_I \in k[V]^G$.

(2) Let us express the preceding isomorphism as

$$k[V]^G \otimes_k \Lambda \mathrm{Mult} X \simeq (k[V] \otimes_k \Lambda(X^*))^G .$$

- The bigraded dimension of the left handside is

$$\begin{aligned}\mathrm{bigrdim}(k[V]^G \otimes_k \Lambda \mathrm{Mult} X) &= \mathrm{bigrdim}(k[V]^G) \cdot \mathrm{bigrdim}(\Lambda \mathrm{Mult} X) \\ &= \frac{(1+yx^{e_1(X)})(1+yx^{e_2(X)}) \cdots (1+yx^{e_{d_X}(X)})}{(1-x^{d_1})(1-x^{d_2}) \cdots (1-x^{d_r})} .\end{aligned}$$

- The bigraded dimension of the right handside is

$$\frac{1}{|G|} \sum_{g \in G} \mathrm{bigrchar}_{k[V]}(g) \cdot \mathrm{bigrchar}_{\Lambda(X^*)}(g) = \frac{1}{|G|} \sum_{g \in G} \frac{\mathrm{det}_X(1+g^{-1}y)}{\mathrm{det}_V(1-g^{-1}x)} .$$

This shows the first identity of (2).

The second one is an immediate consequence of the isomorphism

$$\Lambda \mathrm{Mult} X \simeq \mathrm{Mult} \Lambda X .$$

4.5.4 Derivations and Differential Forms on V

Here we follow closely Orlik and Solomon [OrSo2].

Let us denote by Δ_1 the $k[V]$–module of derivations of the k–algebra $k[V]$, and by Ω^1 the $k[V]$–dual of Δ_1 ("module of 1–forms"). We have

$$\Delta_1 = k[V] \otimes V \quad \text{and} \quad \Omega^1 = k[V] \otimes V^* ,$$

and there is an obvious duality

$$\langle\ ,\ \rangle : \Omega^1 \times \Delta_1 \longrightarrow k[V] .$$

Let $(x_1, x_2, \ldots, x_r)$ be a basis of V^*. Note that the family $(\frac{\partial}{\partial x_1}, \frac{\partial}{\partial x_2}, \ldots, \frac{\partial}{\partial x_r})$ of elements of Δ_1 is the dual basis. Denote by $d : \Omega^1 \longrightarrow \Omega^1$ the derivation of the $k[V]$–module $\Omega^1 = k[V] \otimes V^*$ defined by $d(x \otimes 1) := 1 \otimes x$ for all $x \in V^*$. Then

$$\begin{cases} (\frac{\partial}{\partial x_1}, \frac{\partial}{\partial x_2}, \ldots, \frac{\partial}{\partial x_r}) \text{ is a basis of the } k[V]\text{–module } \Delta_1 . \\ (dx_1 , dx_2 , \ldots , dx_r) \text{ is a basis of the } k[V]\text{–module } \Omega^1 . \end{cases}$$

Let us endow $\varDelta_1$ and $\varOmega^1$ respectively with the graduations defined by

$$\begin{cases} \varDelta_1 = \bigoplus_{n=-1}^{\infty} \varDelta_1^{(n)} \text{ where } \varDelta_1^{(n)} := k[V]^{n+1} \otimes V \\ \varOmega^1 = \bigoplus_{n=1}^{\infty} \varOmega^{1,(n)} \text{ where } \varOmega^{1,(n)} := k[V]^{n-1} \otimes V^* \end{cases}$$

In other words, we have

$$\begin{cases} (\delta \in \varDelta_1^{(n)}) \Longleftrightarrow (\delta(k[V]^m) \subseteq k[V]^{n+m}) \,, \\ (\omega \in \varOmega^{1,(n)}) \Longleftrightarrow (\langle \omega, \varDelta_1^{(m)} \rangle \subseteq k[V]^{n+m}) \,, \end{cases}$$

and so (with previous notation)

$$\begin{cases} \text{the elements } (\dfrac{\partial}{\partial x_1}, \dfrac{\partial}{\partial x_2}, \dots, \dfrac{\partial}{\partial x_r}) \text{ have degree } -1, \\ \text{while the elements } (dx_1 \,, \, dx_2 \,, \, \dots \,, \, dx_r) \text{ have degree 1.} \end{cases}$$

We denote by $\varDelta$ and $\varOmega$ the exterior algebras of respectively the $k[V]$–modules $\varDelta_1$ and $\varOmega^1$. We have

$$\varDelta = k[V] \otimes \varLambda(V) \quad \text{and} \quad \varOmega = k[V] \otimes \varLambda(V^*) \,.$$

We endow $\varDelta$ and $\varOmega$ respectively with the bi–graduations extending the graduations of $\varDelta_1$ and $\varOmega^1$:

$$\begin{cases} \varDelta^{(m,n)} := k[V]^m \otimes \varLambda^{-n}(V) \\ \varOmega^{(m,n)} := k[V]^m \otimes \varLambda^{n}(V^*) \end{cases}$$

The Poincaré series of the preceding bigraded modules are defined as follows:

$$\begin{cases} \operatorname{grdim} \varDelta(t,u) := \displaystyle\sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \sum_{n=0}^{n=r} \dim \varDelta^{(m,-n)} t^m (-u)^{-n} \\ \operatorname{grdim} \varOmega(t,u) := \displaystyle\sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \sum_{n=0}^{n=r} \dim \varOmega^{(m,-n)} t^m (-u)^{n} \,. \end{cases}$$

The following assertion is easy to check.

Proposition 4.45. *The map*

$$d : k[V] \to \varOmega^1, \quad d(x) = \sum_i \frac{\partial x}{\partial x_i} \otimes dx_i$$

extends uniquely to a k-linear endomorphism of Ω which satisfies

- $d(\omega\eta) = d\omega.\eta + (-1)^{\deg\omega}\omega.\mathrm{d}\eta$
- $d^2 = 0$
- $d(x \otimes \lambda) = dx.\lambda$ *for* $x \in k[V]$ *and* $\lambda \in \Lambda(V^*)$.

Fixed Points Under G

By our previous notation, we have

$$(\Omega^1)^G = \mathrm{Mult}V \quad \text{and} \quad (\Delta_1)^G = \mathrm{Mult}V^* .$$

- *Degrees again*: If $f_1, \ldots, f_r$ is a family of algebraically independent homogeneous elements of $k[V]$ such that $k[V]^G = k[f_1, f_2, \ldots, f_r]$, then $df_1, \ldots, df_r$ is a basis of $(\Omega^1)^G$ over $k[V]^G$ (thus consisting in a family of homogeneous elements with degrees respectively $(d_1, d_2, \ldots, d_r)$).
- *Codegrees*: If $\delta_1, \delta_2, \ldots, \delta_r$ is a basis of $(\Delta_1)^G$ over $k[V]^G$ consisting of homogeneous elements of degrees $(d_1^\vee, d_2^\vee, \ldots, d_r^\vee)$, the family $(d_1^\vee, d_2^\vee, \ldots, d_r^\vee)$ is called the family of codegrees of G.

The Poincaré series of $(\Omega^1)^G$ and $(\Delta_1)^G$ are respectively

$$\begin{cases} \mathrm{grdim}\,(\Omega^1)^G(q) := \mathrm{Feg}_V(q) = \dfrac{q^{-1}\sum_{j=1}^{j=r} q^{d_j}}{\prod_{j=1}^{j=r}(1-q^{d_j})} \\ \mathrm{grdim}\,(\Delta_1)^G(q) := \mathrm{Feg}_{V^*}(q) = \dfrac{q\sum_{j=1}^{j=r} q^{d_j^\vee}}{\prod_{j=1}^{j=r}(1-q^{d_j})} \,. \end{cases}$$

Let us denote by $\Delta^G := (k[V] \otimes \Lambda(V^*))^G$ and $\Omega^G := (k[V] \otimes \Lambda(V))^G$ respectively the subspaces of fixed points under the action of G.

Solomon's theorem (see 4.44 stays in particular that the $k[V]^G$–modules Δ^G and Ω^G are the exterior algebras of respectively the $k[V]^G$–modules $(\Delta_1)^G$ and $(\Omega^1)^G$:

$$\begin{cases} \Delta^G = \Lambda_{k[V]^G}((\Delta_1)^G) \\ \Omega^G = \Lambda_{k[V]^G}((\Omega^1)^G) \end{cases}$$

Let us denote by $\mathrm{grdim}\,\Delta(t,u)$ and $\mathrm{grdim}\,\Omega(t,u)$ respectively the generalized Poincaré series of these modules defined by

$$\begin{cases} \mathrm{grdim}\,\Delta^G(t,u) := \displaystyle\sum_{m=0}^{\infty}\sum_{n=0}^{n=r} \dim\,(\Delta^{(m,-n)})^G t^m(-u)^{-n} \\ \mathrm{grdim}\,\Omega^G(t,u) := \displaystyle\sum_{m=0}^{\infty}\sum_{n=0}^{n=r} \dim\,(\Omega^{(m,-n)})^G t^m(-u)^{n} \,. \end{cases}$$

Then the identities following from Solomon's theorem may be rewritten as

$$\begin{cases} \operatorname{grdim} \varDelta^G(t,u) = \dfrac{1}{|G|}\displaystyle\sum_{g\in G}\frac{\det(1-g^{-1}u^{-1})}{\det(1-gt)} = \prod_{j=1}^{j=r}\frac{1-u^{-1}t^{d_j^\vee+1}}{1-t^{d_j}} \\ \operatorname{grdim} \varOmega^G(t,u) = \dfrac{1}{|G|}\displaystyle\sum_{g\in G}\frac{\det(1-gu)}{\det(1-gt)} = \prod_{j=1}^{j=r}\frac{1-ut^{d_j-1}}{1-t^{d_j}} \end{cases}$$

4.5.5 First Applications of Solomon's Theorem

The next property had been conjectured by Jean Michel [Mi] from some experimentation.

A Multiplicative Average

Proposition 4.46. *We have*

$$\left(\prod_{g\in G}\det_V(1-gq)\right)^{1/|G|} = \prod_{j=1}^{j=r}(1-q^{d_j})^{1/d_j}\,.$$

Proof (of 4.46). By 4.44, (2), we have

$$\frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G}\frac{\det(1-gy)}{\det(1-gq)} = \prod_{j=1}^{j=r}\frac{1-yq^{d_j-1}}{1-q^{d_j}}\,.$$

Let us differentiate with respect to y both sides of the preceding equality. We get

$$\frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G}\frac{\dfrac{d}{dy}\det_V(1-gy)}{\det_V(1-gq)} = \sum_{j=1}^{j=r} -q^{d_j-1}\left(\frac{\prod_{k\neq j}(1-yq^{d_k-1})}{\prod_{k=1}^{k=r}(1-q^{d_k})}\right)\,.$$

Now specialize the preceding equality at $y=q$. We get

$$\frac{d}{dq}\operatorname{Log}\left(\prod_{g\in G}\det_V(1-gq)\right)^{1/|G|} = \frac{d}{dq}\operatorname{Log}\left(\prod_{j=1}^{j=r}(1-q^{d_j})^{1/d_j}\right)\,,$$

thus proving the identity announced in 4.46.

Degrees, Codegrees, Hyperplane Intersections

Whenever $g \in G$, we denote by V^g the set of fixed points of V under g. Thus we have $V^g = \ker(g-1)$. We recall that the family of fixed points of elements of G coincides with the family $I(\mathcal{A})$ of intersections of reflecting hyperplanes (see 4.9).

The following identities are consequences of Solomon's theorem.

Proposition 4.47.

1. $\sum_{g\in G} q^{\dim V^g} = \prod_{i=1}^{i=r}(q+d_i-1)\,,$
2. $\sum_{g\in G}(-1)^{\mathrm{codim} V^g}\det_V(g) q^{\dim V^g} = \prod_{i=1}^{i=r}(q+d_i^\vee+1)\,,$

Proof (of 4.47).
(1) We apply 4.44, (2), to the case where $X = V$. We get

$$\frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G}\frac{\det_V(1+gy)}{\det_V(1-gx)} = \prod_{1\le i\le r}\frac{1+yx^{d_i-1}}{1-x^{d_i}}\,. \qquad \text{(O-V)}$$

Let $g \in G$. Assume $\dim V^g = n$, and assume that the nontrivial eigenvalues of g on V are $\zeta_1, \dots \zeta_{r-n}$. Then we have

$$\frac{\det_V(1+gy)}{\det_V(1-gx)} = \frac{(1+y)^n}{(1-x)^n}\frac{\prod_i(1+\zeta_i y)}{\prod_i(1-\zeta_i x)}\,.$$

Let us define the indeterminate q by the formula

$$1+y = q(1-x)\,.$$

The preceding equality becomes

$$\frac{\det_V(1+gy)}{\det_V(1-gx)} = q^n\frac{\prod_i(1-\zeta_i y)+\zeta_i q(1-x)}{\prod_i(1-\zeta_i x)}\,,$$

Now let x tend to 1. The left hand side of (O-V) becomes $\dfrac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G} q^{\dim V^g}$, while each i-th factor of the right hand side of (O-V) becomes

$$\frac{(1-x^{d_i-1})+qx^{d_i-1}(1-x)}{1-x^{d_i}}$$

which tends to $(q+d_i-1)/d_i$ when x tends to 1.

The desired formula comes now from the fact that $|G| = d_1 d_2 \cdots d_r$.

(2) We apply now 4.44, (2) to the case where $X = V^*$. We get

$$\frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G}\frac{\det_V(1+g^{-1}y)}{\det_V(1-gx)} = \prod_{1\le i\le r}\frac{1+yx^{d_i^*+1}}{1-x^{d_i}}\,. \qquad \text{(O-V}^*\text{)}$$

Let $g \in G$, and assume $\dim V^g = n$. Then we have (with previous notation)

$$\frac{\det_V(1+g^{-1}y)}{\det_V(1-gx)} = \frac{(1+y)^n}{(1-x)^n}\frac{\prod_i(1+\zeta_i^{-1}y)}{\prod_i(1-\zeta_i x)}\,.$$

As previously, with $1+y = q(1-x)$ and then $x=1$, we get

$$\frac{\det_V(1+g^{-1}y)}{\det_V(1-gx)} = q^n\frac{\prod_i(1-\zeta_i^{-1}y)+\zeta_i^{-1}q(1-x)}{\prod_i(1-\zeta_i x)}\,,$$

which tends to

$$q^n\frac{\prod_i(1-\zeta_i^{-1})}{\prod_i(1-\zeta_i)}\,.$$

Since $\dfrac{(1+\zeta_i^{-1})}{(1-\zeta_i)} = -\zeta_i^{-1}$, we get

$$\frac{\det_V(1+g^{-1}y)}{\det_V(1-gx)} = q^n(-1)^{r-n}\det_V(g^{-1})\,,$$

so the left hand side of (O-V*) becomes

$$\frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G}(-1)^{\operatorname{codim}V^g}\det_V(g)q^{\dim V^g}\,.$$

As in the proof of (1), the right hand side of (O-V*) becomes

$$\prod_{1\le i\le r}(q+d_i^\vee+1)\,,$$

which proves (2).

Remark 4.48.

- The relation

$$E(V) = (d_1-1)+(d_2-1)+\cdots+(d_r-1) = N^{\mathrm{ref}} = |\mathrm{Ref}(G)|$$

is a consequence of the first equality of the preceding proposition.

- The second equality provides another known identity:

$$E(V^*) = (d_1^\vee+1)+(d_1^\vee+1)+\cdots+(d_1^\vee+1) = N^{\mathrm{hyp}} = |\mathcal{A}|\,.$$

Indeed, if we identify the coefficients of q^{r-1} in both sides of the equality (2), we get $\sum_{s\in\mathrm{Ref}(G)} -\det(s) = \sum_{1\le i\le r}(d_i^\vee+1)$. But

$$\sum_{s\in\mathrm{Ref}(G)} -\det(s) = -\sum_{H\in\mathcal{A}}\sum_{i=1}^{i=e_H-1}\zeta_H^i = -\sum_{H\in\mathcal{A}}(-1) = |\mathcal{A}|\,.$$

Chapter 5
Eigenspaces and Regular Elements

5.1 Eigenspaces

5.1.1 Pianzola–Weiss Formula

Let $\phi \in N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G)$ with finite order. Let $(d_1, \zeta_1), (d_2, \zeta_2), \dots, (d_r, \zeta_r)$ be the family of generalized characteristic degrees of (G, ϕ): there exists an algebraic basis $(u_i)_{1 \le i \le r}$ of R such that, for $1 \le i \le r$ we have $\deg u_i = d_i$ and $\phi(u_i) = \zeta_i u_i$.

We shall study eigenspaces of elements $g\phi$ for $g \in G$. Whenever ζ is a root of unity, we set

$$V(g\phi, \zeta) = \ker(g\phi - \mathrm{Id}_V)\,,$$

and we call such a subspace of V a *ζ–eigenspace of an element of $G\phi$*.

Define the family $\mathrm{Deg}(\phi, \zeta)$ as

$$\mathrm{Deg}(\phi, \zeta) := \big((d_i, \zeta_i) \mid (\zeta^{d_i} = \zeta_i)\big)\ ,$$

and the set $I(\phi, \zeta) \subseteq \{1, 2 \dots, r\}$ by

$$I(\phi, \zeta) := \big\{i \mid (1 \le i \le r)((\zeta^{d_i} = \zeta_i)\big\}\ .$$

Thus we have

$$\mathrm{Deg}(\phi, \zeta) = ((d_i, \zeta_i) \mid (i \in I(\phi, \zeta)))\ .$$

The following formula [PiWe] (which we learned from Kane's book [Ka]) generalizes 4.47.

Proposition 5.1 (Pianzola–Weiss).

1. *Whenever ϕ is an element of finite order of $N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G)$, we have*

$$\frac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g \in G} \frac{\det_V(1 + g\phi y)}{\det_V(1 - g\phi x)} = \prod_{1 \le i \le r} \frac{1 + \zeta_i y x^{d_i - 1}}{1 - \zeta_i x^{d_i}}$$

M. Broué, *Introduction to Complex Reflection Groups and Their Braid Groups*, Lecture Notes in Mathematics 1988,
DOI 10.1007/978-3-642-11175-4_5,

2. *Whenever ζ is a root of unity, then*

$$\sum_{g\in G} q^{\dim V(g\phi,\zeta)} = (\prod_{i\notin I(\phi,\zeta)} d_i) \prod_{i\in I(\phi,\zeta)} (q+d_i-1)\,.$$

Proof (of 5.1).

(1) From theorem 4.44, (1), we deduce an isomorphism of bigraded $N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G)$–modules

$$(S\otimes_k \Lambda(V))^G \xrightarrow{\sim} R\otimes_k \Lambda((S_G\otimes_k V)^G)\,,$$

which implies

$$\mathrm{bigrchar}(\phi,(S\otimes_k \Lambda(V))^G) = \mathrm{bigrchar}(\phi, R\otimes_k \Lambda_R((S_G\otimes_k V)^G))\,.$$

Expanding the above equation provides assertion (1).

(2) Let $(\xi_1,\xi_2,\dots,\xi_r)$ denote the spectrum of $g\phi$ on V. Since

$$\frac{\det_V(1+g\phi y)}{\det_V(1-g\phi x)} = \prod_{i=1}^{i=r} \frac{1+\xi_i y}{1-\xi_i x}\,,$$

we see that this formal series has a pole of order $\dim V(g\phi,\zeta)$ at $x=\zeta^{-1}$. Let us define the indeterminate q by the formula

$$1+\zeta y = q(1-\zeta x)\,.$$

Then

$$\frac{\det_V(1+g\phi y)}{\det_V(1-g\phi x)} = q^{\dim V(g\phi,\zeta)} \prod_{\xi_i\neq\zeta} \frac{1-\xi_i\zeta^{-1}+q\xi_i\zeta^{-1}(1-\zeta x)}{1-\xi_i x}\,,$$

which tends to $q^{\dim V(g\phi,\zeta)}$ when x tends to ζ^{-1}.

On the other hand, we have

$$\frac{1+\zeta_i y x^{d_i-1}}{1-\zeta_i x^{d_i}} = \frac{1-\zeta_i\zeta^{-1}x^{d_i-1}+\zeta_i\zeta^{-1}x^{d_i-1}(1-\zeta x)q}{1-\zeta_i x^{d_i}}$$

which tends to

$$\begin{cases} \dfrac{1}{d_i}(q+d_i-1) & \text{if } \zeta^{d_i}=\zeta_i \\ 1 \quad \text{if} & \text{if } \zeta^{d_i}\neq\zeta_i \end{cases}$$

Since $|G| = d_1 d_2\cdots d_r$, the formula of (1) becomes

$$\sum_{g\in G} q^{\dim V(g\phi,\zeta)} = (\prod_{i\notin I(\phi,\zeta)} d_i) \prod_{i\in I(\phi,\zeta)} (q+d_i-1)\,.$$

Lemma 5.2. *The maximal dimension of the ζ–eigenspaces of elements of $G\phi$ is $|I(\phi,\zeta)|$.*

Proof (of 5.2). This results from the value of the degree of the polynomial described in 5.1, (2).

Lemma 5.3. *The lcm of orders of elements of G is equal to* $\operatorname{lcm}(d_1, d_2, \ldots, d_r)$.

Proof (of 5.2). Applying 5.1 to the case where $\phi = 1$, we see that ζ is an eigenvalue of an element of G if and only if there exists an invariant degree d of G such that $\zeta^d = 1$, *i.e.*, if and only if the order of ζ divides one of the invariant degrees. This proves the statement:

- If $g \in G$, its order is the lcm of the orders of its eigenvalues, so the order of g divides the lcm of the invariant degrees.
- Conversely, if d is an invariant degree and if ζ is a root of the unity with order d, there is $g \in G$ with ζ as an eigenvalue, hence the order of such a g is a multiple of d.

5.1.2 Maximal Eigenspaces: Lehrer–Springer Theory

Here we follow mainly [Sp] and [LeSp].

More Generalities

Let us start by some preliminary results.

Recall that we view $k[V] = \operatorname{Sym}(V^*)$ as acting on V:

$$\left(\sum \lambda_{m_1,\ldots,m_n} {v_1^*}^{m_1} \cdots {v_n^*}^{m_n}\right)(v) := \sum \lambda_{m_1,\ldots,m_n} \langle v_1^*, v\rangle^{m_1} \cdots \langle v_n^*, v\rangle^{m_n} .$$

For $v \in V$, we denote by $\mathrm{e}_v : k[V] \to k$ the algebra morphism "evaluation at v", such that $\mathrm{e}_v(x^*) := x^*(v)$ and we denote by $\mathfrak{m}_v^*$ its kernel, a maximal ideal of $k[V]$. The Hilbert NullstellenSatz tells us that the map $v \mapsto \mathfrak{m}_v^*$ is a bijection from V onto the maximal spectrum of $k[V]$.

It is clear that, for $g \in G$, we have $g(\mathfrak{m}_v^*) = \mathfrak{m}_{g(v)}^*$.

Proposition 5.4. *Let $v, v' \in G$. The following properties are equivalent:*

(i) *Whenever $u^* \in k[V]^G$, we have $u^*(v) = u^*(v')$.*
(ii) *We have*
$$k[V]^G \cap \mathfrak{m}_v^* = k[V]^G \cap \mathfrak{m}_{v'}^* ,$$
(iii) *There exists $g \in G$ such that $v' = g(v)$,*

Proof (of 5.4).

(i)⇒(ii): If (i) holds, we see that the restrictions to $k[V]^G$ of both e_v and $\mathrm{e}_{v'}$ coincide. Hence they have the same kernel, *i.e.*, $k[V]^G \cap \mathfrak{m}_v^* = k[V]^G \cap \mathfrak{m}_{v'}^*$.

(ii)⇒(iii): If (iii) holds, both prime (maximal) ideals $\mathfrak{m}_v^*$ and $\mathfrak{m}_{v'}^*$ lie over the same prime ideal of $k[V]^G = k[V]$. Hence they have to be conjugate by G, which implies (iii).

(iii)⇒(i): clear.

The preceding lemma shows, as already noticed before, that the set of orbits $G\backslash V$ of V under G may be viewed as the maximal spectrum of $k[V]^G$. Thus, viewing V as an algebraic affine variety whose functions algebra is $k[V]$, we see that $G\backslash V$ is an algebraic affine variety whose functions algebra is $k[V]^G$.

More generally, the spectrum $\mathrm{Spec}(k[V]^G)$ of $k[V]^G$ (in bijection with the set of irreducible subvarieties of $G\backslash V$) is naturally identified with the set $G\backslash \mathrm{Spec}(k[V])$ of orbits of G on the spectrum of $k[V]$.

Proposition 5.5. *Let X_1 and X_2 be two irreducible subvarieties of V. The following assertions are equivalent:*

(i) Whenever $u^* \in k[V]^G$, $u^*(X_1) = u^*(X_2)$,
(ii) There exists $g \in G$ such that $X_2 = g(X_1)$.

Proof (of 5.5). Let $\mathfrak{q}_1^* := \{u^* \in k[V] \,|\, (u^*(X_1) = 0)\}$ and $\mathfrak{q}_2^* := \{u^* \in k[V] \,|\, (u^*(X_2) = 0)\}$ be the prime ideals of $k[V]$ attached to X_1 and X_2 respectively.

(i)⇒(ii): If (i) holds, we see that $\mathfrak{q}_1^* \cap k[V]^G = \mathfrak{q}_2^* \cap k[V]^G$, hence there exists $g \in G$ such that $\mathfrak{q}_2^* = g(\mathfrak{q}_1^*)$. Since $X_i = \{x \in V \,|\, (\forall u^* \in \mathfrak{q}_i^*)(u^*(x) = 0)\}$, we see that $X_2 = g(X_1)$.

(ii)⇒(i) is clear.

We recall that $\phi \in N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G)$ is an element of finite order, and we denote by $(d_1, \zeta_1), (d_2, \zeta_2), \dots, (d_r, \zeta_r)$ the family of generalized characteristic degrees of (G, ϕ).

For ζ a root of unity, we recall that we set

$$\begin{aligned} &V(g\phi, \zeta) = \ker(g\phi - \mathrm{Id}_V) \\ &\mathrm{Deg}(\phi, \zeta) := \big((d_i, \zeta_i) \mid (\zeta^{d_i} = \zeta_i)\big) \\ &I(\phi, \zeta) := \{i \mid (1 \leq i \leq r)(\zeta^{d_i} = \zeta_i)\}\,. \end{aligned}$$

We shall prove the following theorem, essentially due to Springer and Springer–Lehrer (see [Sp] and [LeSp]).

Theorem 5.6. *Let ϕ be an element of finite order of the normalizer of G in $\mathrm{GL}(V)$, with generalised characteristic degrees $(d_1, \zeta_1), (d_2, \zeta_2), \dots, (d_r, \zeta_r)$.*

1. *The maximal ζ–eigenspaces of elements of $G\phi$ are all conjugate by G.*
2. *The maximal ζ–eigenspaces of elements of $G\phi$ have dimension $|I(\phi,\zeta)|$.*
3. *Assume that $V(g\phi,\zeta)$ is such a maximal ζ–eigenspace. Then the group*
$$G(g\phi,\zeta) := N_G(V(g\phi,\zeta))/C_G(V(g\phi,\zeta))$$
is a reflection group in its action on $V(g\phi,\zeta)$.
Moreover, if $V^G = 0$ and $V(g\phi,\zeta) \neq 0$, then $G(g\phi,\zeta)$ is nontrivial.
4. *The family $(\mathrm{Res}^V_{V(g\phi,\zeta)}(u_i^*))_{i\in I(\phi,\zeta)}$ is an algebraic basis of the polynomial algebra $\mathrm{Sym}(V(g\phi,\zeta)^*)^{G(g\phi,\zeta)}$, and $\mathrm{Deg}(\phi,\zeta)$ is the family of generalized characteristic degrees of $(G(g\phi,\zeta),g\phi)$.*
5. *The set $\mathcal{A}(g\phi,\zeta)$ of reflecting hyperplanes of $G(g\phi,\zeta)$ is the set of traces of reflecting hyperplanes of G on $V(g\phi,\zeta)$, i.e.,*
$$\mathcal{A}(g\phi,\zeta) = \{\, H\cap V(g\phi,\zeta) \mid (H\in\mathcal{A})(V(g\phi,\zeta)\not\subseteq H)\,\}\,.$$
6. *If G is irreducible on V, then $G(g\phi)$ is irreducible on $V(g\phi,\zeta)$.*

Proof (of 5.6). Note that the generalized characteristic degrees of (G,ϕ) in its action on the dual space V^* are $(d_1,\zeta_1^{-1}),(d_2,\zeta_2^{-1}),\dots,(d_r,\zeta_r^{-1})$. Let $(u_i^*)_{1\le i\le r}$ be an algebraic basis of $k[V]^G$ such that $\deg u_i^* = d_i$ and $\phi(u_i^*) = \zeta_i^{-1}u_i^*$.

For $1\le i\le r$, let us set
$$H(u_i^*) := \{v\in V \mid (u_i^*(v)=0)\}\,.$$

Lemma 5.7. *We have*
$$\bigcup_{g\in G} V(g\phi,\zeta) = \bigcap_{i\notin I(\phi,\zeta)} H(u_i^*)\,.$$

Proof (of 5.7). Indeed, the set described in the left hand side is the set of all vectors $v\in V$ such that ζv and $\phi(v)$ are in the same orbit under G. By 5.4 we see that it is also the set of vectors $v\in V$ such that $u_i^*(\zeta v) = u_i^*(\phi(v))$, *i.e.*, $\zeta^{d_i}u_i^*(v) = \zeta_i u_i^*(v)$, which is indeed $\cap_{i\notin I(\phi,\zeta)}H(u_i^*)$.

We prove now (2): the maximal ζ–eigenspaces have all dimension $|I(\phi,\zeta)|$. These maximal ζ–eigenspaces are the irreducible components of $\cap_{i\notin I(\phi,\zeta)}H(u_i^*)$. The codimension of an irreducible component of the intersection of n hypersurfaces in V is at least $r-n$, hence in this case that codimension is at least $|I(\phi,\zeta)|$. But we know by 5.1, (2), that it is at most $I(\phi,\zeta)|$, whence the desired equality.

We prove now (1), (3) and (4). Consider the system of equations
$$(u_i^*(v)=0) \text{ for } i\in I(\phi,\zeta) \text{ and } v\in V(g\phi,\zeta)\,.$$

The only solution of that system is $v = 0$. Indeed, by lemma 5.7, a solution v of the system satisfies $(u_i^*(v) = 0)$ for all i, and it results from lemma 5.4 that $v = 0$. The following lemma (a reformulation of 2.33) shows then that the family

$$(\mathrm{Res}^V_{V(g\phi,\zeta)}(u_i^*))_{i\in I(\phi,\zeta)}$$

is algebraically independent in $k[V(g\phi,\zeta)]^{G(g\phi,\zeta)}$.

Proposition 5.8. *Let X be a complex vector space of dimension d. Let $(\mu_i)_{1\le i\le d}$ be a family of homogeneous elements of $k[X]$ with strictly positive degrees. Assume that $x = 0$ is the only solution in X of the system of equations*

$$(\mu_i(x) = 0)_{1\le i\le d}\,.$$

Then

1. *the family $(\mu_i)_{1\le i\le d}$ is algebraically independent,*
2. *the map*
$$X \to \mathbb{C}^d\ ,\ x \mapsto (\mu_1(x), \mu_2(x), \ldots, \mu_r(x))$$
is onto.

We prove now assertion (1) of 5.6.

Let $V(g\phi,\zeta)$ and $V(g'\phi,\zeta)$ be two maximal ζ-eigenspaces.

- For $i \notin I(\phi,\zeta)$, we have $u_i^*(V(g\phi,\zeta)) = u_i^*(V(g'\phi,\zeta)) = 0$.
- It results from 5.8 that the maps
$$V(g\phi,\zeta) \to \mathbb{C}^{|I(\phi,\zeta)|}\ ,\ x \mapsto (u_i^*(x))_{i\in I(\phi,\zeta)}$$
$$V(g'\phi,\zeta) \to \mathbb{C}^{|I(\phi,\zeta)|}\ ,\ x \mapsto (u_i^*(x))_{i\in I(\phi,\zeta)}$$
are onto.

Thus for all $u^* \in k[V]^G$, we have

$$u^*(V(g\phi,\zeta)) = u^*(V(g'\phi,\zeta))\,.$$

It follows then from 5.5 that there exists $h \in G$ such that $V(g'\phi,\zeta) = h((V(g\phi,\zeta))$.

We prove (3) and (4).

The family $(\mathrm{Res}^V_{V(g\phi,\zeta)}(u_i^*))_{i\in I(\phi,\zeta)}$ is a family of parameters for the polynomial algebra $k[V(g\phi,\zeta)]^{G(g\phi,\zeta)}$. Thus it follows from 3.34 that

- $k[V(g\phi,\zeta)]^{G(g\phi,\zeta)}$ is free of finite rank, say m, on $k[(\mathrm{Res}^V_{V(g\phi,\zeta)}(u_i^*))_{i\in I(\phi,\zeta)}]$,
- $k[V(g\phi,\zeta)]$ is free of rank $m|G(g\phi,\zeta)| = \prod_{i\in I(\phi,\zeta)} d_i$ on that same polynomial algebra $k[(\mathrm{Res}^V_{V(g\phi,\zeta)}(u_i^*))_{i\in I(\phi,\zeta)}]$.

Hence by 4.1 it suffices to prove that $|G(g\phi,\zeta)| = \prod_{i\in I(\phi,\zeta)} d_i$. Consider again 5.1, (2). The coefficient of $q^{\dim V(g\phi,\zeta)}$ in the left hand side equals

$$|C_G(V(g\phi,\zeta))|.|G : N_G(V(g\phi,\zeta))| = |G|/|G(g\phi,\zeta)|\,.$$

Comparison with the coefficient of q in the right hand side (and remembering that $|G| = \prod_{1\leq i\leq r} d_i$) gives the result.

If $V^G = 0$, none of the characteristic degrees is equal to 1. We have $\dim V(g\phi,\zeta) = |I(\phi,\zeta)|$, hence $V(g\phi,\zeta) \neq 0$ implies $I(\phi,\zeta) \neq \emptyset$, from which it follows that

$$|G(g\phi,\zeta)| = \prod_{i\in I(\phi,\zeta)} d_i \neq 1 \,.$$

We prove (5).

Let X be a reflecting hyperplane for $G(g\phi,\zeta)$, an hyperplane of $V(g\phi,\zeta)$. Let us show that there exists $H \in \mathcal{A}$ such that $X = H \cap V(g\phi,\zeta)$. We know by Steinberg theorem that $C_G(X)$ is a reflection group, whose set of fixed points is $\bigcap_{H\in\mathcal{A}\,,\,H\supseteq X} H$. That set of fixed points does not contain $V(g\phi,\zeta)$ since there is at least an element in $C_G(X) \cap N_G(V(g\phi,\zeta))$ which induces a reflection on $V(g\phi,\zeta)$. Hence we have

$$\left(V(g\phi,\zeta) \cap \bigcap_{H\in\mathcal{A}\,,\,H\supseteq X} H \right) \neq V(g\phi,\zeta)\,,$$

from which it follows that there exists $H \in \mathcal{A}$ such that $X = H \cap V(g\phi,\zeta)$.

Conversely, assume that $H_0 \in \mathcal{A}$ is such that $X := H_0 \cap V(g\phi,\zeta) \neq V(g\phi,\zeta)$.

By Steinberg theorem, the group $C_G(X)$ is generated by its reflections, namely those reflections of G whose hyperplane contains X. It follows that the set of fixed points $V^{C_G(X)}$ of $C_G(X)$ is the intersection of all reflecting hyperplanes of G which contain X, and so we have $V(g\phi,\zeta) \not\subseteq V^{C_G(X)}$.

Notice that $g\phi$ normalizes X (since it acts on X as $\zeta\mathrm{Id}_X$), hence normalizes $C_G(X)$, and that $V(g\phi,\zeta))$ is a maximal ζ–eigenspace for $C_G(X)g\phi$.

Now consider the pair $(C_G(X), g\phi)$ in its action on the vector space $V/V^{C_G(X)}$. The last assertion of 5.6, (3), applies here, if we replace V by $V/V^{C_G(X)}$ and (G,ϕ) by $(C_G(X), g\phi))$: we get

$$N_G(V(g\phi,\zeta)) \cap C_G(X)/C_G(V(g\phi,\zeta)) \neq 1\,,$$

proving the existence of a reflection in $G(g\phi,\zeta)$ with hyperplane X.

We prove (6).

Assume that $G(g\phi,\zeta)$ is not irreducible on $V(g\phi,\zeta)$, *i.e.*, that there exists nonzero subspaces X and Y of $V(g\phi,\zeta)$, both stable by $G(g\phi,\zeta)$, such that $V(g\phi,\zeta) = X \oplus Y$. By 1.6, we see that the reflecting hyperplanes of reflections in $G(g\phi,\zeta)$ must either contain X or contain Y.

Now by the assertion 4 just proved, we see that, whenever s is a reflection in G, its reflecting hyperplane must contain either X or Y. Then assertion 5 follows from the following general lemma.

Lemma 5.9. *Let V be a vector space and let G be a subgroup of* $\mathrm{GL}(V)$ *generated by a set S.*

Let X be a subspace of V, and let $G'(X)$ denote the subgroup of G generated by those elements of S which do not fix X.

1. *We have $G'(X) \lhd G$.*
2. *Assume* $\dim V \geq 2$. *Assume that there exists a nonzero subspace Y of V such that whenever $s \in S$, s fixes X or Y. Then G is reducible in its action on V.*

Proof (of 5.9).

(1) It suffices to check that, whenever $s \in S$ and s' does not fix X, then $ss's^{-1} \in G'(X)$. We may assume that $s \notin G'(X)$, which implies that s fixes X. But then $ss's^{-1}$ cannot fix X, since if it were the case, s' would fix X.

(2) By (1), we see that $V^{G'(X)}$ is stable under G. It suffices to prove that $V^{G'(X)} \neq 0$.

Let $G(Y)$ denote the fixator of Y. By assumption, we see that $G'(X) \subset G(Y)$. It follows that $V^{G(Y)} \subset V^{G'(X)}$ and since $Y \neq 0$, we have $V^{G(Y)} \neq 0$, hence $V^{G'(X)} \neq 0$.

5.2 Regular Elements

5.2.1 First Properties

The content of this paragraph is essentially due to Springer ([Sp]).

We keep using the same notation as in previous paragraph:

- ϕ is a finite order element of $N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G)$,
- $((d_1, \zeta_1), (d_1, \zeta_1), \ldots, (d_1, \zeta_1))$ is the corresponding family of generalized degrees for the pair (G, ϕ),
- $(u_1^*, u_2^*, \ldots, u_r^*)$ is an algebraic basis of $k[V]^G$ such that, for all i, we have

$$\deg(u_i^*) = d_i \quad \text{and} \quad \phi(u_i^*) = \zeta_i^{-1} u_i^* \,.$$

Definition 5.10. *Let ζ be a root of unity. We say that an element $g\phi$ in the coset $W\phi$ is ζ–regular if*

$$V(g\phi, \zeta) \cap V^{\mathrm{reg}} \neq \emptyset \,.$$

We say that the element $g\phi$ is regular if it is ζ–regular for some root of unity ζ.

Notice that by Steinberg's theorem (see 4.7), and element $g\phi$ is ζ–regular if and only if

$$C_G(V(g\phi,\zeta)) = \{1\}\,.$$

Let us also remark that the regularity is invariant G–conjugation: the coset $G\phi$ is stable under G–conjugation (for $h, g \in G$, we have $h(g\phi)h^{-1} = hg\phi h\phi^{-1}\phi$) and $h(V(g\phi,\zeta)) = V(h(g\phi)h^{-1},\zeta)\,,$

The following result relates the regularity to Lehrer–Springer theory.

Proposition 5.11. *Assume that $g\phi$ is ζ–regular, where ζ has order d.*

1. *The space $V(g\phi,\zeta)$ is a maximal ζ eigenspace.*
2. *We have $N_G(V(g\phi,\zeta)) = G(g\phi,\zeta) = C_G(g\phi)\,.$*

The following corollary is then an immediate consequence of Springer–Lehrer theorem 5.6.

Corollary 5.12. *Assume $g\phi$ is ζ–regular.*

1. $\mathrm{dim} V(g\phi,\zeta) = |I(\phi,\zeta)|\,.$
2. *$C_G(g\phi)$ is a reflection group in its action on $V(g\phi,\zeta)$.*
3. *$(\mathrm{Res}^V_{V(g\phi,\zeta)}(u_i^*))_{i\in I(\phi,\zeta)}$ is an algebraic basis of $\mathrm{Sym}(V(g\phi,\zeta)^*)^{C_G(g\phi)}$, and $\mathrm{Deg}(\phi,\zeta)$ is the family of generalized degrees of $(C_G(g\phi), g\phi)$.*
4. *The set $\mathcal{A}(g\phi,\zeta)$ of reflecting hyperplanes of $C_G(g\phi)$ is the set of traces of reflecting hyperplanes of G on $V(g\phi,\zeta)$, i.e.,*

$$\mathcal{A}(g\phi,\zeta) = \{\, H\cap V(g\phi,\zeta) \mid (H\in\mathcal{A})(V(g\phi,\zeta)\not\subseteq H)\,\}\,.$$

Proof (of 5.11). We use the following lemma.

Lemma 5.13. *If $g\phi$ is ζ–regular and if $V(g\phi,\zeta) \subseteq V(g'\phi,\zeta)$ for some $g' \in G$, then $g'\phi = g\phi$.*

Proof (of 5.13). The element $(g'\phi)^{-1}g\phi = {g'}^{-1}g$ centralizes $V(g\phi,\zeta)$ which implies $g' = g$.

(1) follows immediately from the preceding lemma. Let us prove (2). Since $C_G(g\zeta)$ stabilizes all the eigenspaces of $g\phi$, it suffices to prove that $N_G(V(g\phi,\zeta)) \subseteq C_G(g\phi)$. Now if $h \in N_G(V(g\phi,\zeta))$, we have $V(h(g\phi)h^{-1},\zeta) = V(g\phi,\zeta)$, hence $h(g\phi)h^{-1} = g\phi$.

Proposition 5.14.

1. *The group G acts transitively on the set of ζ–regular elements of $G\phi$.*
2. *Let m be the order of the image of ϕ in $N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G)/G$, and let d be the order of ζ. Then the (common) order of the ζ–regular elements of $G\phi$ is $\mathrm{lcm}(d,m)$.*

Proof (of 5.14).

(1) Assume that $g\phi$ and $g'\phi$ are ζ–regular. Since $V(g\phi,\zeta)$ and $V(g'\phi,\zeta)$ are maximal ζ–eigenspaces by 5.11, it follows from 5.6 that they are conjugate: there is $h \in G$ such that $V(g'\phi,\zeta) = h(V(gp,\zeta))$, hence $V(g'\phi,\zeta) = V(h(g\phi)h^{-1},\zeta)$ and lemma 5.13 implies that $g'\phi = h(g\phi)h^{-1}$.

(2) Let us first assume that $\phi = 1$, hence $m = 1$. In that case we see that g^d induces the identity on $V(g,\zeta)$, hence is trivial. This shows that the order of g is d.

Let us now treat the general case. The element $(g\phi)^m$ belongs to G, and is ζ^m–regular. By what precedes, we know that the order of $(g\phi)^m$ is the order of ζ^m, *i.e.*, $d/\mathrm{gcd}(d,m)$. Assume the order of $g\phi$ is dd'. Notice that m divides that order. It follows from what precedes that $dd'/m = d/\mathrm{gcd}(d,m)$, hence $d' = m/\mathrm{gcd}(d,m)$, and $dd' = dm/\mathrm{gcd}(d,m) = \mathrm{lcm}(d,m)$.

5.2.2 Exponents and Eigenvalues of Regular Elements

Theorem 5.15. *Let $g\phi$ be ζ–regular, and let X be a $k[G\langle\phi\rangle]$–module.*

Let $(\zeta_1^{(X)},\zeta_2^{(X)},\dots,\zeta_{d_X}^{(X)})$ be the spectrum of ϕ on $\mathrm{Mult}(X) = k[V]_G \otimes X^*$.

1. *The spectrum of $g\phi$ in its action on X^* is*

$$\mathrm{Spec}(g\phi, X^*) = (\zeta_\alpha^{(X)}\zeta^{e_\alpha(X)})_{1\le\alpha\le d_X}\,.$$

2. *In particular, we have*

$$\det{}_{X^*}(g\phi) = \zeta^{E(X)}\det{}_{\mathrm{Mult}(X)}(\phi)\,.$$

Proof (of 5.15). Let $(\lambda_1,\lambda_2,\dots,\lambda_{d_X})$ be the spectrum of $g\phi$ on X^*.

We choose a basis $(\xi_1,\xi_2,\dots,\xi_{d_X})$ of X^* over which $g\phi$ is diagonal.

We choose a basis $(\mu_1,\mu_2,\dots,\mu_{d_X})$ of $\mathrm{Mult}(X)$ consisting of homogeneous elements of degrees $(e_1(X),e_2(X),\dots,e_{d_X}(X))$ which are eigenvectors of ϕ with eigenvalues $(\zeta_1^{(X)},\zeta_2^{(X)},\dots,\zeta_{d_X}^{(X)})$.

Finally, we choose a basis $(v_1,v_2,\dots,v_r)$ of V over which $g\phi$ is diagonal, and such that v_1 is a regular ζ–eigenvector of $g\phi$. We denote by $(x_1,x_2,\dots,x_r)$ its dual basis, and we view elements of $k[V]$ as elements of $k[x_1,x_2,\dots,x_r]$.

We recall that the matrix $J_X = (j_{\alpha,\beta}(X))_{1\le\alpha,\beta\le d_X}$, with entries in $k[V]$, where $j_{\alpha,\beta}(X)$ is homogeneous of degree $e_\beta(X)$, is defined by

$$\mu_\beta = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{\alpha=d_X} j_{\alpha,\beta}(X)\xi_\alpha\,.$$

Applying $g\phi$ to both sides of the preceding equality gives

$$\zeta_\beta^{(X)}\mu_\beta = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{\alpha=d_X} g\phi(j_{\alpha,\beta}(X))\lambda_\alpha\xi_\alpha\,,$$

from which we deduce

$$\zeta_\beta^{(X)} j_{\alpha,\beta}(X) = g\phi(j_{\alpha,\beta}(X))\lambda_\alpha\,.$$

We know that $\det(J_X)(v) \neq 0$, which implies the existence of a permutation $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_{d_X}$ such that $j_{\sigma(\beta),\beta}(X)(v) \neq 0$, which in turn implies that, as a polynomial in $(x_1, x_2, \dots, x_r)$, $j_{\sigma(\beta),\beta}(X)$ must involve a monomial $x_1^{e_\beta(X)}$.

Projecting the previous equality onto that monomial gives

$$\zeta_\beta^{(X)} = \zeta^{-e_\beta(X)}\lambda_{\sigma(\beta)}\,,$$

which gives the announced equality.

Remark 5.16. By assumption, we have

$$\mathrm{grchar}_{\mathrm{Mult}(X)}(\phi) = \zeta_1^{(X)} q^{e_1(X)} + \zeta_2^{(X)} q^{e_2(X)} + \cdots + \zeta_{d_X}^{(X)} q^{e_{d_X}(X)}\,,$$

from which we deduce that

$$\chi_{X^*}(g\phi) = \mathrm{grchar}_{\mathrm{Mult}(X)}(\phi)(\zeta q)_{|q=1}\,.$$

Let us draw some consequences of 5.15 in some particular cases.

We say that the integer d is regular of G if there exists a root of unity ζ of order d and a ζ–regular element $g \in G$.

Proposition 5.17. *Assume that d is regular for G.*

1. *Whenever X is a kG–module, d divides $E(X) + E(X^*)$.*
2. *Whenever $\mathfrak{p} \in \mathcal{A}/G$, d divides $\omega_\mathfrak{p} e_\mathfrak{p}$.*
3. *d divides $N^{\mathrm{ref}} + N^{\mathrm{hyp}}$.*

Proof (of 5.17).

(1) Let $g \in G$ be ζ–regular where ζ has order d. By 5.15 we have

$$\det{}_X(g) = \zeta^{E(X^*)} \text{ and } \det{}_{X^*}(g) = \zeta^{E(X)}\,,$$

which implies

$$\zeta^{E(X)+E(X^*)} = 1\,,$$

proving (1).

(2) and (3) are particular cases of (1), when applied successively to $X = \theta_{\mathfrak{p}}$ (see 3.8) and to $X = V$.

Let $(\zeta_1^\vee, \zeta_2^\vee, \dots, \zeta_r^\vee)$ be the spectrum of ϕ^{-1} in its action on $\mathrm{Mult}(V^*)$. We set

$$I^\vee(\phi, \zeta) := \{\, i \mid (1 \le i \le r)(\zeta^{d_i^\vee} = \zeta_i^\vee)\}\,.$$

We recall that

$$I(\phi, \zeta) := \{\, i \mid (1 \le i \le r)(\zeta^{d_i} = \zeta_i)\}\,.$$

Proposition 5.18.

1. *Assume that $g\phi$ is ζ–regular. Then we have*

$$\begin{aligned} \mathrm{Spec}(g\phi, V) &= \{(\zeta_i^\vee)^{-1}\zeta^{d_i^\vee + 1} \mid (1 \le i \le r)\} \\ \mathrm{Spec}(g\phi, V^*) &= \{\zeta_i^{-1}\zeta^{d_i - 1} \mid (1 \le i \le r)\} \end{aligned}$$

2. *We have $|I(\phi, \zeta)| = |I^\vee(\phi, \zeta)|$.*

Proof (of 5.18). The first assertion is an immediate consequence of 5.15. The second follows then from the fact that the multiplicity of ζ as an eigenvalue of $g\phi$ in its action of both V and V^* is $\dim V(g\phi, \zeta) = |I(\phi, \zeta)|$.

A Characterisation of Regularity

We prove now yet another consequence of Solomon's theorem (for the first three assertions, see [LeMi] and [BoLeMi]).

Proposition 5.19.

1. *We always have $I(\phi, \zeta) \subseteq I^\vee(\phi, \zeta)$.*
2. *The following assertions are equivalent:*
   (i) *There is a ζ regular element in $G\phi$.*
   (ii) *We have $|I(\phi, \zeta)| = |I^\vee(\phi, \zeta)|$.*
3. *If this is the case, denoting by $g_0\phi$ a ζ–regular element, we have*

$$\sum_{g \in G} \det_V(g\phi) q^{\dim V(g\phi, \zeta)} = \det_V(g_0\phi) \prod_{i \notin I(\phi,\zeta)} d_i \prod_{i \in I(\phi,\zeta)} (q - d_i^\vee - 1)$$

4. *and the set of codegrees of the reflection group $C_G(g\phi)$ is $\{d_i^\vee \mid (i \in I(\phi, \zeta))\}$.*

Proof (of 5.19). The proof depends on the following consequence of Solomon's theorem, an analog of Pianzola–Weiss formula.

Proposition 5.20.

1. $\dfrac{1}{|G|}\sum_{g\in G}\dfrac{\det_{V^*}(1+g\phi y)}{\det_V(1-g\phi x)}=\prod_{i=1}^{i=r}\dfrac{1+\zeta_i^\vee y x^{d_i^\vee+1}}{1-\zeta_i x^{d_i}}$.
2. $(-\zeta)^r\sum_{g\in G}\det_V(g\phi)^{-1}(-q)^{\dim V(g\phi,\zeta)}$

$$= \begin{cases} \displaystyle\prod_{i\in I^\vee(\phi,\zeta)}(q+d_i^\vee+1)\prod_{i\notin I^\vee(\phi,\zeta)}(1-\zeta_i^\vee)\prod_{i\notin I(\phi,\zeta)}\frac{d_i}{1-\zeta_i} & \text{if } I(\phi,\zeta)=I^\vee(\phi,\zeta) \\ 0 \quad \text{otherwise.} & \end{cases}$$

Proof (of 5.20).

(1) As previously, the formula expresses the equality of bigraded traces of ϕ acting on both sides of the isomorphism

$$(S\otimes_k \Lambda(V^*))^G \simeq R\otimes_k \Lambda((S_G\otimes_k V^*)^G)\,.$$

Then comparing the order of pole at $x=\zeta^{-1}$ of the two sides of the equation (1) of 5.20 gives the inclusion $I(\phi,\zeta)\subseteq I^\vee(\phi,\zeta)$.

(2) We replace the pair of indeterminates (x,y) in (1) by the pair (x,q) where $1+\zeta x=q(1-\zeta y)$, and we compute the limits of the two sides when $x\to\zeta^{-1}$.

Let us now prove 5.19.

(1) was already noticed in the proof of 5.20.

(2) We have already seen above (see 5.18, (2), that (i) implies (ii). Let us prove the converse.

Assume that no element of $G\phi$ is ζ–regular. Let us then prove that the coefficient of $q^{|I(\phi,\zeta)|}$ in the polynomial $\sum_{g\in G}\det_V(g\phi)^{-1}(-q)^{\dim V(g\phi,\zeta)}$ is zero. Denote by c that coefficient. We have

$$c=\pm\sum_{V'\text{ max. eigens.}}\ \sum_{\substack{g\in G\\ V(g\phi,\zeta)=V'}}\det_V(g\phi)^{-1}\,.$$

If $V(g\phi,\zeta)$ is maximal, we have $V(g\phi,\zeta)=V(g'\phi,\zeta)$ if and only if there exists $z\in C_G(V(g\phi,\zeta))$ such that $g'\phi=zg\phi$. Hence denoting by $g_{V'}$ an element such that $V(g_{V'}\phi,\zeta)=V'$, we have

$$c=\pm\sum_{V'\text{ max. eigens.}}\det_V(g_{V'}\phi)^{-1}\sum_{z\in C_G(V')}\det_V(z)^{-1}\,.$$

Since $C_G(V')$ is a reflection group, the character det is nontrivial, hence

$$\sum_{z\in C_G(V')}\det_V(z)^{-1}=0\,,$$

proving that $c = 0$.

(3) Applying 5.20, (2), we see that

$$\sum_{g \in G} \det_V(g\phi) q^{\dim V(g\phi,\zeta)} = a(\zeta) \prod_{i \in I(\phi,\zeta)} (q - d_i^\vee - 1)$$

for some scalar $a(\zeta)$, which we compute by computing the coefficient of $q^{|I(\phi,\zeta)|}$.

Remark 5.21. Combining (3) and 5.20, (2), we see that

$$\det_V(g_0\phi) = \zeta^r \prod_{i \notin I(\phi,\zeta)} \frac{1-\zeta_i^\vee}{1-\zeta_i}\,.$$

Let us now prove assertion (4) of 5.19.

It relies first on a remark about "control of fusion", quite analogous to Burnside's theorem for Sylow subgroups of a finite group.

Proposition 5.22. *Let $E_0 := V(g_0\phi)$ be a maximal ζ–eigenspace for $G\phi$.*

1. *The group $G_0 := N_G(E_0)$ controls the fusion of ζ–eigenspaces for $G\phi$, i.e., whenever E is a ζ–eigenspace for $G\phi$ and $g \in G$ are such that $E, g(E) \subseteq E_0$, then there exist $g_0 \in G_0$ and $z \in C_G(E)$ such that $g = g_0 z$.*
2. *In particular, if E is a ζ–eigenspace contained in E_0, we have $N_G(E) = N_{G_0}(E)C_G(E)$.*

Proof (of 5.22). It suffices to apply Springer–Lehrer theorem to the reflection group $C_G(E)$ endowed with the automorphism $g_0\phi$. Indeed, $E, g(E) \subseteq E_0$ implies that E_0 and $g^{-1}(E_0)$ are both maximal ζ–eigenspaces for $C_G(E)g_0\phi$, hence are conjugate under $C_G(E)$.

We choose a maximal ζ-eigenspace $E_0 = V(g_0\phi, \zeta)$, and we set $G_0 := N_G(E_0) = C_G(g_0\phi)$.

Let $(d_{0,j}^\vee)_{j\in J}$ be the family of codegrees of G_0.

Assertion (3) of 5.19 implies that

$$\begin{cases} \displaystyle\sum_{g \in G} \det_V(g\phi) q^{\dim V(g\phi,\zeta)} = \frac{|G|}{|G_0|} \det_V(g_0\phi) \prod_{i \in I(\phi,\zeta)} (q - d_i^\vee - 1) \\ \displaystyle\sum_{g \in G_0} \det_{E_0}(g\phi) q^{\dim E_0(g\phi,\zeta)} = \det_{E_0}(g_0\phi) \prod_{j \in J} (q - d_{0,j}^\vee - 1)\,. \end{cases}$$

Thus we see that in order to prove (4), it suffices to prove that

$$\frac{1}{|G|} \sum_{g \in G} \det_V(gg_0^{-1}) q^{\dim V(g\phi,\zeta)} = \frac{1}{|G_0|} \sum_{g \in G_0} \det_{E_0}(gg_0^{-1}) q^{\dim E_0(g\phi,\zeta)}\,. \qquad (*)$$

Let us reorder the lefthand side of the above desired identity as follows.

For each ζ–eigenspace E, we denote by G_E the set of $g \in G$ such that $V(g\phi, \zeta) = E$. Then

$$\sum_{g\in G} \det_V(gg_0^{-1})q^{\dim V(g\phi,\zeta)} = \sum_{E} q^{\dim E} \sum_{g\in G_E} \det_V(gg_0^{-1})\,.$$

• Choose a complete set of representatives for the orbits of G on the set of ζ–eigenspaces, chosen as a complete set of representatives for the orbits of G_0 on its set of ζ–eigenspaces in $E_0 = V(g_0\phi, \zeta)$. We have

$$\sum_{g\in G} \det_V(gg_0^{-1})q^{\dim V(g\phi,\zeta)} = \sum_{(E\subseteq E_0)/G_0} |G : N_G(E)| q^{\dim E} \sum_{g\in G_E} \det_V(gg_0^{-1})\,.$$

Since $N_G(E) = N_{G_0}(E)C_G(E)$, we have

$$|G : N_G(E)| = |G : G_0)||G_0 : N_{G_0(E)}|/|C_G(E) : C_{G_0}(E)|$$

so

$$\frac{1}{|G|} \sum_{g\in G} \det_V(gg_0^{-1})q^{\dim V(g\phi,\zeta)} = \frac{1}{|G_0|} \sum_{(E\subseteq E_0)/G_0} \frac{|G_0 : N_{G_0}(E)|}{|C_G(E) : C_{G_0}(E)|} \times q^{\dim E} \sum_{g\in G_E} \det_V(gg_0^{-1})\,.$$

Hence in order to prove (*) it suffices to prove

$$\frac{1}{|C_G(E)|} \sum_{g\in G_E} \det_V(gg_0^{-1}) = \frac{1}{|C_{G_0}(E)|} \sum_{g\in (G_0)_E} \det_{E_0}(gg_0^{-1})\,. \qquad (*')$$

• Let us define the two functions α and α_0 on the set of ζ–eigenspaces contained in E_0 by the formulae

$$\alpha(E) := \frac{1}{|C_{G_0}(E)|} \sum_{g\in G_E} \det_V(gg_0^{-1})$$
$$\alpha_0(E) := \frac{1}{|C_{G_0}(E)|} \sum_{g\in (G_0)_E} \det_{E_0}(gg_0^{-1})\,.$$

We want to prove that $\alpha = \alpha_0$. Notice that

$$\alpha(E_0) = \alpha_0(E_0) = 1\,.$$

• The sets G_E and $(G_0)_E$ may be described through the formulae

$$C_G(E)g_0 = \dot{\bigcup}_{E\subseteq E'} G_{E'} \quad \text{and} \quad C_{G_0}(E)g_0 = \dot{\bigcup}_{E\subseteq E'\subseteq E_0} (G_0)_{E'}\,.$$

Since (for E strictly contained in E_0) $C_G(E)$ is a nontrivial reflection group, this implies that, for $E \subset E_0$,

$$\sum_{\{E' | (E \subseteq E'\}} |C_G(E')|\alpha(E') = \sum_{\{E' | (E \subseteq E' \subseteq E_0)\}} |C_{G_0}(E')|\alpha_0(E') = 0\,.$$

• For the left handside of the previous formula, let us sum over a set of representatives for the $C_G(E)$–orbits of eigenspaces E' containing E. Since $C_{G_0}(E)$ controls the fusion of $C_G(E)$ onto the set of such eigenspaces, we can sum over a set of representatives of $C_{G_0}(E)$–orbits of eigenspaces E' such that $E \subseteq E' \subseteq E_0$. We get

$$\sum_{\{E' | (E \subseteq E'\}} |C_G(E')|\alpha(E') = \sum_{\{E' | (E \subseteq E' \subseteq E_0)\}/C_{G_0}(E)} \frac{|C_G(E)|}{|N_{C_G(E)}(E')|} |C_G(E')|\alpha(E')\,.$$

Since

$$N_{C_G(E)}(E') = N_{C_{G_0}(E)}(E')C_G(E')\,,$$

we have

$$\frac{|C_G(E)|}{|N_{C_G(E)}(E')|}|C_G(E')| = |C_G(E)|\,\frac{|C_{G_0}(E)|}{|N_{C_{G_0}(E)}(E')|}\,,$$

from which it follows that

$$\begin{aligned}\sum_{\{E' | (E \subseteq E'\}} |C_G(E')|\alpha(E') &= |C_G(E)| \sum_{\{E' | (E \subseteq E' \subseteq E_0)\}/C_{G_0}(E)} \frac{|C_{G_0}(E')|}{|N_{C_{G_0}(E)}(E')|}\alpha(E') \\ &= |C_G(E)| \sum_{\{E' | (E \subseteq E' \subseteq E_0)\}} \alpha(E')\end{aligned}$$

hence

$$\sum_{\{E' | (E \subseteq E' \subseteq E_0)\}} \alpha(E') = 0\,.$$

This shows that the function α is recursively determined by its value on E_0.

The same holds of α_0, and since both α and α_0 take the same value on E_0 we see that $\alpha = \alpha_0$.

5.3 Regular Braid Automorphisms

5.3.1 Lifting Regular Automorphisms: Case When the Base Point Is an Eigenvector

The Definition

Let $x_0 \in V^{\mathrm{reg}}$. We set $B := \Pi^1(V/V^{\mathrm{reg}}, x_0)\,.$

Let us denote by $N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G)(x_0)$ the fixator (centralizer) of x_0 in $N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G)$.

Then we define the injective group morphism

$$\begin{cases} \mathbf{a} : N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G)(x_0) \longrightarrow \mathrm{Aut}(B) \\ \phi \mapsto \mathbf{a}(\phi)\,, \end{cases}$$

as follows.

Let $\gamma : t \mapsto \gamma(t)$ be a path from x_0 to gx_0. We denote by $\mathbf{a}(\phi)(\gamma)$ the path from x_0 to ${}^{\phi}gx_0$ defined by

$$\mathbf{a}(\phi)(\gamma) : \begin{cases} [0,1] \to V^{\mathrm{reg}} \\ t \mapsto \phi\gamma(t)\,. \end{cases}$$

Thus $\mathbf{a}(\phi)$ defines an automorphism of B, and we have

- $\mathbf{a}$ is a group morphism,
- the natural epimorphism $B \twoheadrightarrow G$ is $N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G)(x_0)$–equivariant,
- $\ker \mathbf{a} \subseteq C_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G)(x_0)$.

Moreover, if G is irreducible in its action on V, then

$$C_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G) = \mathbb{C}^{\times}\mathrm{Id}_V \quad \text{hence} \quad C_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G)(x_0) = \{1\} \quad \text{and} \quad \ker \mathbf{a} = \{1\}\,.$$

More generally, let $L = \mathbb{C}x_0$ be the line generated by x_0, let $N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G, L)$ be the subgroup of $N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G)$ which stabilizes (normalizes) L. The elements of finite order of $N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G, L)$ are regular automorphisms.

Whenever $\phi \in N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G, L)$, let $\zeta_\phi \in \mathbb{C}^{\times}$ be such that $\phi x_0 = \zeta_\phi x_0$. Then the map

$$\begin{cases} N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G, L) \to N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G)(x_0) \\ \phi \mapsto \zeta_\phi^{-1}\phi \end{cases}$$

is a group morphism, and we extend the group morphism $\mathbf{a}$ to

$$\begin{cases} \mathbf{a} : N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G, L) \longrightarrow \mathrm{Aut}(B) \\ \phi \mapsto \mathbf{a}(\phi)\,, \end{cases}$$

by the formula

$$\mathbf{a}(\phi) := \mathbf{a}(\zeta_\phi^{-1}\phi)\,.$$

The Case of an Inner Automorphism: Roots of Powers of $\boldsymbol{\pi}$

Let $\zeta := \exp(2\pi i m/d)$ be a primitive d–th root of 1 (thus m is prime to d). We recall that, for $x \in V^{\mathrm{reg}}$, we denote by $\pi_{\zeta,x}$ the path from x to ζx defined by

$$\pi_{\zeta,x} : \begin{cases} [0,1] \to V^{\mathrm{reg}} \\ t \mapsto \exp(2\pi i m t/d)x\,. \end{cases}$$

The proof of the following lemma is straightforward.

Lemma 5.23. *Let $\zeta = \exp(2\pi i m/d)$ with order d. Assume that $\phi \in N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G, L)$ is such that $\phi x_0 = \zeta x_0$. Then we have the following identity between paths in V^{reg}:*

$$\pi_{\zeta,x_0} \cdot \phi(\pi_{\zeta,x_0}) \cdots \phi^{d-1}(\pi_{\zeta,x_0}) = \pi^m .$$

Now consider the case where ϕ belongs to G (hence induces an inner automorphism of G).

Proposition 5.24. *Let $\zeta = \exp(2\pi i m/d)$ with order d. Assume that g is a ζ–regular element of G, such that $gx_0 = \zeta x_0$.*

1. *The path π_{ζ,x_0} defines an element $\mathbf{g} \in B = \Pi^1(V^{\mathrm{reg}}/G, x_0)$*
   - *with image g through the natural surjection $B \twoheadrightarrow G$,*
   - *which is a d–th root of π^m, i.e., $\mathbf{g}^d = \pi^m$.*
2. *We have $\mathbf{a}(g) = \mathrm{Ad}(\mathbf{g})$.*

Proof (of 5.24). Only the second assertion needs a proof.

Let $h \in G$ and let γ be a path in V^{reg} from x_0 to hx_0, thus defining an element $\mathbf{h}$ of B with image h in G. We must prove that $\mathbf{ghg}^{-1} = \mathbf{a}(h)(\mathbf{h})$, *i.e.*, that the paths

$$\pi_{\zeta,x_0} \cdot h(\gamma) \cdot ghg^{-1}(\pi^{-1}_{\zeta,x_0}) \quad \text{and} \quad \zeta^{-1} g(\gamma)$$

are homotopic:

$$\begin{tikzcd}
x_0 \arrow[r, "\zeta^{-1}g(\gamma)"] \arrow[d, "\pi_{\zeta,x_0}"'] & ghg^{-1}(x_0) \\
\zeta x_0 \arrow[r, "g(\gamma)"'] & gh(x_0) \arrow[u, "ghg^{-1}(\pi^{-1}_{\zeta,x_0})"']
\end{tikzcd}$$

which is clear.

Main Properties of the Lifting

Proposition 5.25. *The group morphism $\mathbf{a} : N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G, L) \longrightarrow \mathrm{Aut}(B)$ has the following properties.*

1. *The natural epimorphism $B \twoheadrightarrow G$ is $N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G, L)$–equivariant.*

2. *If ϕ is ζ–regular where $\zeta = \exp(2\pi i m/d)$ and if $\phi^\delta \in G$, then $\mathbf{a}(\phi^\delta)$ is the inner automorphism of B defined by the element π_{ζ^δ, x_0} (a d-th root of $\pi^{m\delta}$ in B).*
3. *If G is irreducible on V, then*
   a) $\ker \mathbf{a} = \mathbb{C}^\times \mathrm{Id}_V$,
   b) *the order of $\mathbf{a}(\phi)$ is equal to the order of the automorphism $\mathrm{Ad}(\phi)$ of G defined by ϕ.*

Proof (of 5.25). Only (3) requires a proof. Assume that $\phi x_0 = \zeta x_0$. The order of $\mathbf{a}(\phi)$ is equal to the order of $\zeta^{-1}\phi$. Now $(\zeta^{-1}\phi)^m = 1$ if and only if $\phi^m = \zeta^m \mathrm{Id}_V$, hence if and only if $\phi^m \in \mathbb{C}^\times \mathrm{Id}_V$.

5.3.2 Lifting Regular Automorphisms: General Case

Let now x_1 be another element of V^{reg}. We set

$$B(x_i) := \Pi^1(V^{\mathrm{reg}}/G, x_i) \quad \text{for } i = 0, 1\,.$$

Given a path γ from x_0 to x_1, we denote by

$$\tau_\gamma : B(x_0) \xrightarrow{\sim} B(x_1)$$

the isomorphism (conjugation by τ_γ) induced by the formula

$$\tau_\gamma(\mathbf{g}) := \gamma^{-1} \cdot \mathbf{g} \cdot g\gamma$$

whenever $\mathbf{g}$ is a path from x_0 to gx_0.

Now if ϕ_1 is an element of $N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G)$ which fixes x_1 we denote by $\mathbf{a}(\phi_1)$ the automorphism of $B(x_1)$ defined as above. Through the isomorphism τ_γ, that automorphism becomes an automorphism $\mathbf{a}_\gamma(\phi_1)$ of $B = B(x_0)$.

More precisely, $\mathbf{a}_\gamma(\phi_1)$ is defined by the formula

$$\begin{aligned}\mathbf{a}_\gamma(\phi_1)(\mathbf{g}) : &= \gamma \cdot \phi_1 \tau_\gamma(\mathbf{g}) \cdot ({}^{\phi_1}g)\gamma^{-1} \\ &= (\gamma \cdot \phi_1\gamma^{-1}) \cdot \phi_1\mathbf{g} \cdot ({}^{\phi_1}g)(\phi_1\gamma \cdot \gamma^{-1})\,.\end{aligned}$$

Notice that if $p : B \twoheadrightarrow G$ denotes the natural surjection, we have

$$p \cdot \mathbf{a}_\gamma(\phi_1) = \mathrm{Ad}(\phi_1) \cdot p\,.$$

Definition 5.26. *A ζ–regular braid automorphism is an automorphism of the braid group $B(x_0)$ of the form*

$$\mathbf{a}_\gamma(\phi_1) : \mathbf{g} \mapsto (\gamma \cdot \phi_1\gamma^{-1}) \cdot \phi_1\mathbf{g} \cdot ({}^{\phi_1}g)(\phi_1\gamma \cdot \gamma^{-1})$$

where

- ϕ_1 *is an element of* $N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G)$ *such that* $\phi x_1 = \zeta x_1$ *for some element* $x_1 \in V^{\mathrm{reg}}$,
- γ *is a path from* x_0 to x_1.

A regular braid automorphism is an automorphism which is ζ*–regular for some* ζ.

We also denote by $\pi^{(\gamma)}_{\zeta,x_1}$ the path transported from π_{ζ,x_1} by τ_γ, hence a path from x_0 to ζx_0.

If $g \in G$ is such that $gx_1 = \zeta x_1$ where $\zeta = \exp(2\pi i m/d)$, then $\pi^{(\gamma)}_{\zeta,x_1}$ defines an element $\mathbf{g} \in B$ with image g in G and such that $\mathbf{g}^d = \pi^m$.

The following set of properties of $\mathbf{a}_\gamma$ results immediately from proposition 5.25 above.

Proposition 5.27. *Let* $x_1 \in V^{\mathrm{reg}}$. *Let* L_1 *denote the line* $\mathbb{C}x_1$.

Whenever γ *is a path in* V^{reg} *from* x_0 *to* x_1, *the group morphism* $\mathbf{a}_\gamma : N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G, L_1) \longrightarrow \mathrm{Aut}(B)$ *has the following properties.*

1. *The natural epimorphism* $B \twoheadrightarrow G$ *is* $N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G, L_1)$*–equivariant.*
2. *If* $\phi \in N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G, L_1)$ *is such that* $\phi x_1 = \zeta x_1$ *where* $\zeta = \exp(2\pi i m/d)$ *and if* $\phi^\delta \in G$, *then* $\mathbf{a}_\gamma(\phi^\delta)$ *is the inner automorphism of* B *defined by the element* $\pi^{(\gamma)}_{\zeta^\delta,x_0}$ *(a d-th root of* $\pi^{m\delta}$ *in* B*).*
3. *If* G *is irreducible on* V, *then*
   a) $\ker \mathbf{a}_\gamma = \mathbb{C}^\times \mathrm{Id}_V$,
   b) *the order of* $\mathbf{a}_\gamma(\phi)$ *is equal to the order of the automorphism* $\mathrm{Ad}(\phi)$ *of* G *defined by* ϕ.

A regular braid automorphism $\alpha = \mathbf{a}_\gamma(\phi_1)$ has a well–defined image $\overline{\alpha} := \mathrm{Ad}(\phi_1)$ in $N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G)/C_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G)$, hence *a fortiori* it has a well–defined image in $N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G)/G$.

In the case where ϕ and ϕ_1 have the same image in $N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G)/G$, it results from 5.14 that ϕ and ϕ_1 are conjugate under G.

Proposition 5.28. *The set of regular braid automorphisms with given image in* $N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G)/G$ *is a single orbit under* B.

Proof (of 5.28). It will follow from the following lemma. We must here use precise notation, distinguishing between paths in V^{reg} and elements of B.

Proposition 5.29. *Let* ϕ *be an element of* $N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G)$ *which fixes* x_0. *If* γ *is a path in* V^{reg} *from* x_0 *to* gx_0, *defining an element* $\mathbf{g} \in B$ *(with image* $g \in G$*), then*

$$\mathrm{Ad}(\mathbf{g}) \cdot \mathbf{a}(\phi) \cdot \mathrm{Ad}(\mathbf{g}^{-1}) = \mathbf{a}_\gamma(g\phi g^{-1})\,.$$

Proof (of 5.29). Notice that $g\phi g^{-1}$ is an element ϕ_1 of $N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G)$ which fixes the regular vector $x_1 := gx_0$.

Let $\mathbf{h} \in B$, defined by a path η in V^{reg} from x_0 to hx_0. Hence $\mathbf{h}$ has image h in G. We must prove

$$\mathbf{g}\mathbf{a}(\phi)(\mathbf{g}^{-1}\mathbf{h}\mathbf{g})\mathbf{g}^{-1} = \mathbf{a}_\gamma(g\phi g^{-1})(\mathbf{h}),$$

i.e., in other words

$$\begin{aligned}\gamma \cdot g\phi(g^{-1}\gamma^{-1} \cdot g^{-1}\eta \cdot g^{-1}h\gamma) \cdot (\phi_1 h \phi_1^{-1}\gamma^{-1}) \\ = (\gamma \cdot \phi_1\gamma^{-1}) \cdot \phi_1\eta \cdot ({}^{\phi_1}h)(\phi_1\gamma \cdot \gamma^{-1}),\end{aligned}$$

an equality between two paths in V^{reg} from x_0 to ${}^{\phi_1}hx_0$ which we leave to the reader to check.

Remark 5.30. Assume that both $g\phi$ and ϕ are ζ–regular.

- There exists $h \in G$ such that $hg\phi h^{-1} = \phi$, *i.e.*, $g = h^{-1\,\phi}h$.
- If $\phi x_0 = \zeta x_0$, then for $x_1 := h^{-1}x_0$, we have $g\phi x_1 = \zeta x_1$.

Let us set $\phi_1 := g\phi$. We have (see lemma 5.23)

$$\pi_{\zeta,x_1} \cdot \phi_1(\pi_{\zeta,x_1}) \cdots \phi_1^{d-1}(\pi_{\zeta,x_1}) = \pi^m .$$

5.3.3 Lifting Springer Theory

Let us now turn again to the case where $\phi \in N_{\mathrm{GL}(V)}(G)$ has regular ζ–eigenvector x_0.

We recall that $G(\phi,\zeta) := N_G(V(\phi,\zeta)) = C_G(\phi)$, and that $V(\phi,\zeta)^{\mathrm{reg}} \subseteq V^{\mathrm{reg}}$ (see 5.6).

The composition

$$\iota(\phi,\zeta) : V(\phi,\zeta)^{\mathrm{reg}}/G(\phi,\zeta) \hookrightarrow V^{\mathrm{reg}}/G(\phi,\zeta) \twoheadrightarrow V^{\mathrm{reg}}/G$$

induces a morphism

$$\Pi^1(V(\phi,\zeta)^{\mathrm{reg}}/G(\phi,\zeta), x_0) \to \Pi^1(V^{\mathrm{reg}}/G, x_0)$$

i.e., a morphism

$$\Pi^1\iota(\phi,\zeta) : B(\phi,\zeta) \to B .$$

Proposition 5.31. *1. The image of the map $\iota(\phi,\zeta)$ is the subvariety $(V^{\mathrm{reg}}/G)^{\langle\zeta^{-1}\phi\rangle}$ of fixed points under the action of the group $\langle\zeta^{-1}\phi\rangle$ generated by $\zeta^{-1}\phi$, and $\iota(\phi,\zeta)$ induces an homeomorphism*

$$V(\phi,\zeta)^{\mathrm{reg}}/G(\phi,\zeta) \xrightarrow{\sim} (V^{\mathrm{reg}}/G)^{\langle\zeta^{-1}\phi\rangle} .$$

2. *The image of the map $\Pi^1\iota(\phi,\zeta)$ is contained in the group $C_B(\mathbf{a}(\phi))$ of fixed points of $\mathbf{a}(\phi)$ in B.*

Proof (of 5.31). (1) Let $x \in V(\phi,\zeta)^{\mathrm{reg}}$. Thus we have $\phi x = \zeta x$, proving that x is fixed under $\zeta^{-1}\phi$, hence its image in V^{reg}/G is also fixed by $\zeta^{-1}\phi$.

Let us prove that $\iota(\phi,\zeta)$ is surjective on $(V^{\mathrm{reg}}/G)^{\langle\zeta^{-1}\phi\rangle}$. Let $y \in V^{\mathrm{reg}}$ be such that its image modulo G belongs to $(V^{\mathrm{reg}}/G)^{\langle\zeta^{-1}\phi\rangle}$. We want to prove that there is $h \in G$ such that hy is fixed by $\zeta^{-1}\phi$. By assumption there is $g \in G$ such that $\zeta^{-1}g\phi y = y$. Hence $g\phi$ is ζ–regular, and it results from 5.6 that $g\phi$ and ϕ are G–conjugate: there exists $h \in G$ such that $hg\phi h^{-1} = \phi$. It follows that $\zeta^{-1}\phi hy = hy$, hence hy is fixed under $\zeta^{-1}\phi$.

Let us prove that $\iota(\phi,\zeta)$ is injective. Let $x, x' \in V(\phi,\zeta)^{\mathrm{reg}}$, so that $\phi x = \zeta x$ and $\phi x' = \zeta x'$. Assume that x and x' have the same image in V^{reg}/G, *i.e.*, there is $g \in G$ such that $x' = gx$. It follows that $\phi^{-1}g^{-1}\phi g x = x$, and since x is regular we have $g = \phi^{-1}g\phi$, proving that $g \in C_G(\phi) = G(\phi,\zeta)$.

(2) Let $z \in G(\phi,\zeta)$, and let $\widetilde{z}$ be a path from x_0 to zx_0 in $V(\phi,\zeta)^{\mathrm{reg}}$. It is clear that $\zeta^{-1}\phi$ fixes $\widetilde{z}$, proving that the image of $\Pi^1\iota(\phi,\zeta)$ is contained in $C_B(\mathbf{a}(\phi))$.

Springer theory (see 5.6) shows that the group $C_G(\phi)$ is a reflection group. The following conjecture may be viewed as "Braid Springer theory".

Conjecture 5.32. The map $\Pi^1\iota(\phi,\zeta)$ is injective and its image is $C_B(\mathbf{a}(\phi))$.

The preceding conjecture is now proved for $\phi \in G$ (see [Bes3]). The case where $\phi \notin G$ is still open. Let us state Bessis' result for completeness.

Theorem 5.33. *Let $\zeta_d := e^{2i\pi/d}$.*

1. *The ζ_d–regular elements in G are the images of the d-th roots of π.*
2. *All d-th roots of π are conjugate in B.*
3. *Let $\mathbf{g}$ be a d-th root of π, with image g in G. Then $C_B(\mathbf{g})$ is the braid group of $C_G(g)$.*

Appendix A
Coxeter and Artin–Like Presentations

This appendix is written after the work which can be found in various successive papers : [BrMaRo], [BeMi], [Bes3], [MaMi].

A.1 Meaning of the Diagrams

A.1.1 Diagrams for the Reflection Groups

Here are some definitions, notation, conventions, which will allow the reader to understand the diagrams.

The groups have presentations given by diagrams $\mathcal{D}$ such that

- the nodes correspond to pseudo-reflections in G, the order of which is given inside the circle representing the node,
- two distinct nodes which do not commute are related by "homogeneous" relations with the same "support" (of cardinality 2 or 3), which are represented by links between two or three nodes, or circles between three nodes, weighted with a number representing the degree of the relation (as in Coxeter diagrams, 3 is omitted, 4 is represented by a double line, 6 is represented by a triple line). These homogeneous relations are called the *braid relations* of $\mathcal{D}$.

More details are provided below.

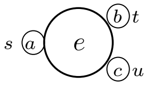
This paragraph provides a list of examples which illustrate the way in which diagrams provide presentations for the attached groups.

- The diagram $\underset{s}{\textcircled{d}}\overset{e}{\rule{2em}{0.4pt}}\underset{t}{\textcircled{d}}$ corresponds to the presentation

$$s^d = t^d = 1 \text{ and } \underbrace{ststs\cdots}_{e \text{ factors}} = \underbrace{tstst\cdots}_{e \text{ factors}}$$

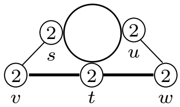
- The diagram $\underset{s}{\textcircled{5}}\overset{}{=\!=\!=}\underset{t}{\textcircled{3}}$ corresponds to the presentation

$$s^5 = t^3 = 1 \text{ and } stst = tsts.$$

- The diagram 

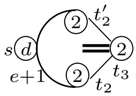
corresponds to the presentation

$$s^a = t^b = u^c = 1 \text{ and } \underbrace{stustu\cdots}_{e \text{ factors}} = \underbrace{tustus\cdots}_{e \text{ factors}} = \underbrace{ustust\cdots}_{e \text{ factors}} .$$

- The diagram 

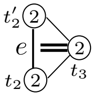
corresponds to the presentation

$$\begin{aligned} &s^2 = t^2 = u^2 = v^2 = w^2 = 1\,, \\ &uv = vu\,,\ sw = ws\,,\ vw = wv\,, \\ &sut = uts = tsu\,, \\ &svs = vsv\,,\ tvt = vtv\,,\ twt = wtw\,, wuw = uwu\,. \end{aligned}$$

- The diagram 

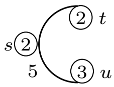
corresponds to the presentation

$$\begin{aligned} &s^d = {t_2'}^2 = t_2^2 = t_3^2 = 1\,,\ st_3 = t_3 s\,, \\ &st_2't_2 = t_2't_2 s\,, \\ &t_2't_3t_2' = t_3t_2't_3\,,\ t_2t_3t_2 = t_3t_2t_3\,,\ t_3t_2't_2t_3t_2't_2 = t_2't_2t_3t_2't_2t_3\,, \\ &\underbrace{t_2st_2't_2t_2't_2t_2'\cdots}_{e+1 \text{ factors}} = \underbrace{st_2't_2t_2't_2t_2't_2\cdots}_{e+1 \text{ factors}} . \end{aligned}$$

- The diagram 

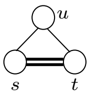
corresponds to the presentation

$$\begin{aligned} &{t_2'}^2 = t_2^2 = t_3^2 = 1\,, \\ &t_2't_3t_2' = t_3t_2't_3\,,\ t_2t_3t_2 = t_3t_2t_3\,,\ t_3t_2't_2t_3t_2't_2 = t_2't_2t_3t_2't_2t_3\,, \\ &\underbrace{t_2t_2't_2t_2't_2t_2'\cdots}_{e \text{ factors}} = \underbrace{t_2't_2t_2't_2t_2't_2\cdots}_{e \text{ factors}} . \end{aligned}$$

- The diagram 

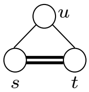
corresponds to the presentation

$$s^2 = t^2 = u^3 = 1\,,\ stu = tus\,,\ ustut = stutu\,.$$

- The diagram 

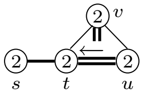
corresponds to the presentation

$$s^2 = t^2 = u^2 = 1,\ stst = tsts, tutu = utuu, sus = usu, tu(stu)^2 s = utu(stu)^2.$$

- The diagram 

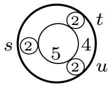
corresponds to the presentation

$$s^2 = t^2 = u^2 =,\ stst = tsts,\ tut- = utu,\ sus =,\ tu(stu)^3 t = utu(stu)^3\,.$$

- The diagram 

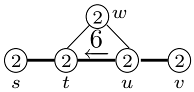
corresponds to the presentation

$$s^2 = t^2 = u^2 = v^2 = 1,\ sv = vs\,,\ su = us\,,$$
$$sts = tst,\ vtv = tvt,\ uvu = vuv,\ tutu = utut,\ vtuvtu = tuvtuv\,.$$

- The diagram 

corresponds to the presentation

$$s^2 = t^2 = u^2 = 1\,,\ ustus = stust\,,\ tust = ustu\,.$$

- The diagram 

corresponds to the presentation

$$s^2 = t^2 = u^2 = v^2 = w^2 = 1\,,\ vt = tv\,,\ uv = vu\,,\ tu = ut\,,\ wu = uw\,,$$
$$sts = tst\,,\ tut = utu\,,\ uvu = vuv\,,\ twt = wtw\,,\ uwu = wuw\,,$$
$$utwutw = twutwu = wutwut\,.$$

In the following tables, we denote by $H \rtimes K$ a group which is a non-trivial split extension of K by H. We denote by $H \cdot K$ a group which is a non-split extension of K by H. We denote by p^n an elementary abelian group of order p^n.

A.1.2 Braid Diagrams

A diagram where the orders of the nodes are "forgotten" and where only the braid relations are kept is called a *braid diagram* for the corresponding group.

All braid diagrams define presentation by braid reflections of the corresponding braid groups.

The groups have been ordered by their diagrams, by collecting groups with the same braid diagram. Thus, for example,

- G_{15} has the same braid diagram as the groups $G(4d, 4, 2)$ for all $d \geq 2$,
- G_4, G_8, G_{16}, G_{25}, G_{32} all have the same braid diagrams as groups $\mathfrak{S}_3$, $\mathfrak{S}_4$ and $\mathfrak{S}_5$,
- G_5, G_{10}, G_{18} have the same braid diagram as the groups $G(d, 1, 2)$ for all $d \geq 2$,
- G_7, G_{11}, G_{19} have the same braid diagram as the groups $G(2d, 2, 2)$ for all $d \geq 2$,
- G_{26} has the same braid diagram as $G(d, 1, 3)$ for $d \geq 2$.

The element β (generator of $Z(G)$) is given in the last column of our tables. Notice that the knowledge of degrees and codegrees allows then to find the order of $Z(G)$, which is not explicitly provided in the tables.

The tables provide diagrams and data for all irreducible reflection groups.

- Tables 1 and 2 collect groups corresponding to infinite families of braid diagrams,
- Table 3 collects groups corresponding to exceptional braid diagrams but G_{24}, G_{27}, G_{29}, G_{33}, G_{34}.
- The last table (table 4) provides diagrams for the remaining cases (G_{24}, G_{27}, G_{29}, G_{33}, G_{34}).

Degrees and Codegrees of a Braid Diagram

The following property has been first noticed on the tables. It generalizes a property already noticed by Orlik and Solomon for the case of Coxeter–Shephard groups (see [OrSo3], (3.7)).

It has been proven by Couwenberg–Heckman–Looijenga [CoHeLo] who also proved that, given any braid diagram, there is a complex reflection group generated by reflections of order 2 with that braid diagram.

Proposition A.1. *Let $\mathcal{D}$ be a braid diagram of rank r. There exist two families*

$$(\mathbf{d}_1, \mathbf{d}_2, \ldots, \mathbf{d}_r) \quad \textit{and} \quad (\mathbf{d}_1^\vee, \mathbf{d}_2^\vee, \ldots, \mathbf{d}_r^\vee)$$

of r integers, depending only on $\mathcal{D}$, and called respectively the degrees and the codegrees of $\mathcal{D}$, with the following property: whenever G is a complex reflection group with $\mathcal{D}$ as a braid diagram, its degrees and codegrees are given by the formulae

$$d_j = |Z(G)|\mathbf{d}_j \quad \textit{and} \quad d_j^\vee = |Z(G)|\mathbf{d}_j^\vee \quad (j = 1, 2, \ldots, r).$$

The Zeta Function of a Braid Diagram

In [DeLo], Denef and Loeser compute the *zeta function of local monodromy of the discriminant* of a complex reflection group G, which is the element of $\mathbb{Q}[q]$ defined by the formula

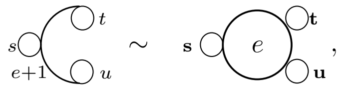
$$Z(q,G) := \prod_j \det(1 - q\mu, H^j(F_0, \mathbb{C}))^{(-1)^{j+1}} ,$$

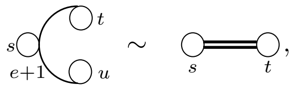
where F_0 denotes the Milnor fiber of the discriminant at 0 and μ denotes the monodromy automorphism (see [DeLo]).

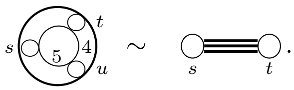
Putting together the tables of *loc.cit.* and our braid diagrams, one may notice the following fact.

Proposition A.2. *The zeta function of local monodromy of the discriminant of a complex reflection group G depends only on the braid diagram of G.*

Remark A.3. Two different braid diagrams may be associated to isomorphic braid groups. For example, this is the case for the following rank 2 diagrams (where the sign "$\sim$" means that the corresponding groups are isomorphic) :

For e even, 

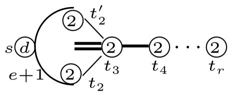
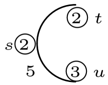
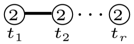
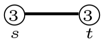
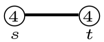
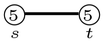
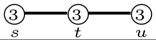
for e odd, 

and 

It should be noticed, however, that the above pairs of diagrams do not have the same degrees and codegrees, nor do they have the same zeta function. Thus, degrees, codegrees and zeta functions are indeed attached to the braid diagrams, not to the braid groups.

A.2 Tables

Table A.1

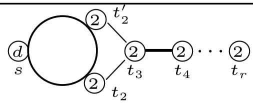
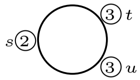
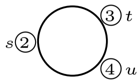
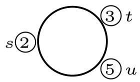
name	diagram	degrees	codegrees	β	field	$G/Z(G)$
$G(de,e,r)$ $e>2,d,r\geq 2$		$(ed,2ed,\ldots,(r-1)ed,rd)$	$(0,ed,\ldots,(r-1)ed)$	$s^{\frac{r}{(e\wedge r)}}(t'_2t_2t_3\cdots t_r)^{\frac{e(r-1)}{(e\wedge r)}}$	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_{de})$	
G_{15}		$12, 24$	$0, 24$	$ustut=s(tu)^2$	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_{24})$	$\mathfrak{S}_4$
$\mathfrak{S}_{r+1}$		$(2,3,\ldots,\ldots,r+1)$	$(0,1,\ldots,\ldots,r-1)$	$(t_1\cdots t_r)^{r+1}$	$\mathbb{Q}$	
G_4		4,6	0,2	$(st)^3$	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_3)$	$\mathfrak{A}_4$
G_8		8,12	0,4	$(st)^3$	$\mathbb{Q}(i)$	$\mathfrak{S}_4$
G_{16}		20,30	0,10	$(st)^3$	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_5)$	$\mathfrak{A}_5$
G_{25}		6,9,12	0,3,6	$(stu)^4$	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_3)$	$3^2\rtimes SL_2(3)$

(continued)

Table A.1 (continued)

name	diagram	degrees	codegrees	β	field	$G/Z(G)$
G_{32}	$\underset{s}{\textcircled{3}} - \underset{t}{\textcircled{3}} - \underset{u}{\textcircled{3}} - \underset{v}{\textcircled{3}}$	12, 18, 24, 30	0, 6, 12, 18	$(stuv)^5$	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_3)$	$PSp_4(3)$
$G(d,1,r)$ $d \geq 2$	$\underset{s}{\textcircled{d}} = \underset{t_2}{\textcircled{2}} - \underset{t_3}{\textcircled{2}} \cdots \underset{t_r}{\textcircled{2}}$	$(d, 2d, \ldots, \ldots, rd)$	$(0, d, \ldots, \ldots, (r-1)d)$	$(st_2t_3\cdots t_r)^r$	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_d)$	
G_5	$\underset{s}{\textcircled{3}} = \underset{t}{\textcircled{3}}$	6,12	0,6	$(st)^2$	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_3)$	$\mathfrak{A}_4$
G_{10}	$\underset{s}{\textcircled{4}} = \underset{t}{\textcircled{3}}$	12,24	0,12	$(st)^2$	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_{12})$	$\mathfrak{S}_4$
G_{18}	$\underset{s}{\textcircled{5}} = \underset{t}{\textcircled{3}}$	30,60	0,30	$(st)^2$	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_{15})$	$\mathfrak{A}_5$
G_{26}	$\underset{s}{\textcircled{2}} = \underset{t}{\textcircled{3}} - \underset{u}{\textcircled{3}}$	6,12,18	0,6,12	$(stu)^3$	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_3)$	$3^2 \rtimes SL_2(3)$

Table A.2

name	diagram	degrees	codegrees	β	field	$G/Z(G)$
$G(2d,2,r)$ $d,r\geq 2$		$(2d,4d,\ldots$ $2(r-1)d,rd)$	$(0,2d,\ldots$ $2(r-1)d)$	$s^{\frac{r}{(2\wedge r)}}(t'_2 t_2 t_3 \cdots t_r)^{\frac{2(r-1)}{(2\wedge r)}}$	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_{2d})$	
G_7		12,12	0,12	stu	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_{12})$	$\mathfrak{A}_4$
G_{11}		24,24	0,24	stu	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_{24})$	$\mathfrak{S}_4$
G_{19}		60,60	0,60	stu	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_{60})$	$\mathfrak{A}_5$

(continued)

Table A.2 (continued)

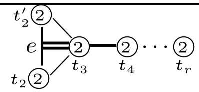
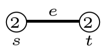
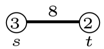
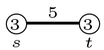
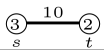
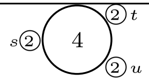
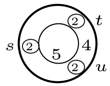
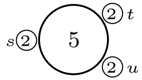
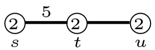
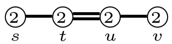
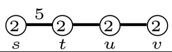
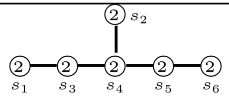
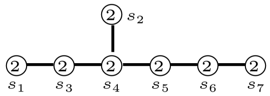
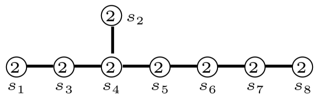
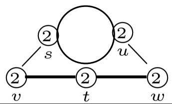
name	diagram	degrees	codegrees	β	field	$G/Z(G)$
$G(e,e,r)$ $e\geq 2, r>2$		$(e, 2e, \ldots, (r-1)e, r)$	$(0, e, \ldots, (r-2)e, (r-1)e-r)$	$(t_2' t_2 t_3 \cdots t_r)^{\frac{e(r-1)}{(e \wedge r)}}$	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_e)$	
$G(e,e,2)$ $e\geq 3$		2,e	0,e-2	$(st)^{e/(e\wedge 2)}$	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_e+\zeta_e^{-1})$	
G_6		4,12	0,8	$(st)^3$	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_{12})$	$\mathfrak{A}_4$
G_9		8,24	0,16	$(st)^3$	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_8)$	$\mathfrak{S}_4$
G_{17}		20,60	0,40	$(st)^3$	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_{20})$	$\mathfrak{A}_5$
G_{14}		6,24	0,18	$(st)^4$	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_3, \sqrt{-2})$	$\mathfrak{S}_4$
G_{20}		12,30	0,18	$(st)^5$	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_3, \sqrt{5})$	$\mathfrak{A}_5$
G_{21}		12,60	0,48	$(st)^5$	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_{12}, \sqrt{5})$	$\mathfrak{A}_5$

Table A.3

name	diagram	degrees	codegrees	β	field	$G/Z(G)$
G_{12}		6,8	0,10	$(stu)^4$	$\mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{-2})$	$\mathfrak{S}_4$
G_{13}		8,12	0,16	$(stu)^3$	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_8)$	$\mathfrak{S}_4$
G_{22}		12,20	0,28	$(stu)^5$	$\mathbb{Q}(i,\sqrt{5})$	$\mathfrak{A}_5$
G_{23}		2,6,10	0,4,8	$(stu)^5$	$\mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{5})$	$\mathfrak{A}_5$
G_{28}		2,6, 8,12	0,4, 6,10	$(stuv)^6$	$\mathbb{Q}$	$2^4 \rtimes (\mathfrak{S}_3 \times \mathfrak{S}_3)$ †
G_{30}		2,12, 20,30	0,10, 18,28	$(stuv)^{15}$	$\mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{5})$	$(\mathfrak{A}_5 \times \mathfrak{A}_5) \rtimes 2$ ‡

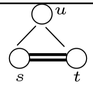
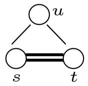
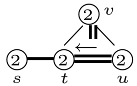
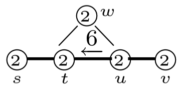
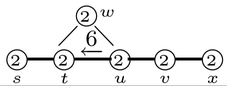
(continued)

Table A.3 (continued)

name	diagram	degrees	codegrees	β	field	$G/Z(G)$
G_{35}		2,5,6,8, 9,12	0,3,4,6, 7,10	$(s_1 \cdots s_6)^{12}$	$\mathbb{Q}$	$SO_6^-(2)'$
G_{36}		2,6,8, 10,12, 14,18	0,4,6, 8,10, 12,16	$(s_1 \cdots s_7)^9$	$\mathbb{Q}$	$SO_7(2)$
G_{37}		2,8,12, 14,18,20, 24,30	0,6,10, 12,16,18, 22,28	$(s_1 \cdots s_8)^{15}$	$\mathbb{Q}$	$SO_8^+(2)$
G_{31}		8,12, 20,24	0,12, 16,28	$(stuwv)^6$	$\mathbb{Q}(i)$	$2^4 \rtimes \mathfrak{S}_6$ ⋆

† The action of $\mathfrak{S}_3 \times \mathfrak{S}_3$ on 2^4 is irreducible.
‡ The automorphism of order 2 of $\mathfrak{A}_5 \times \mathfrak{A}_5$ permutes the two factors.
⋆ The group $G_{31}/Z(G_{31})$ is not isomorphic to the quotient of the Weyl group D_6 by its center.

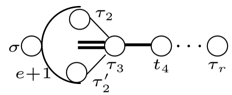
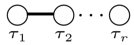
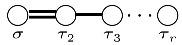
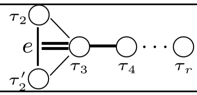
Table A.4

name	diagram	degrees	codegrees	β	field	$G/Z(G)$
G_{24}	 (∗)	4,6,14	0,8,10	$(stu)^7$	$\mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{-7})$	$GL_3(2)$
G_{27}	 (∗∗)	6,12,30	0,18,24	$(uts)^5$	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_3,\sqrt{5})$	$\mathfrak{A}_6$
G_{29}		4,8,12,20	0,8,12,16	$(stvu)^5$	$\mathbb{Q}(i)$	$2^4 \rtimes \mathfrak{S}_5$ †
G_{33}		4,6,10, 12,18	0,6,8, 12,14	$(stuvw)^9$	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_3)$	$SO_5(3)'$
G_{34}		6,12,18,24, 30,42	0,12,18,24, 30,36	$(stuvwx)^7$	$\mathbb{Q}(\zeta_3)$	$PSO_6^-(3)'{\cdot}2$

$(*) tu(stu)^2 s = utu(stu)^2$

$(**) tu(stu)^3 t = utu(stu)^3$
† The group $G_{29}/Z(G_{29})$ is not isomorphic to the Weyl group D_5. p

Table A.5 Braid diagrams

name	diagram	degrees	codegrees	β
$B(de,e,r)$ $e\geq 2, r\geq 2, d>1$		$e, 2e, \ldots, (r-1)e, r$	$0, e, \ldots, (r-1)e$	$\sigma^{\frac{r}{(e\wedge r)}}(\tau_2\tau_2'\tau_3\cdots\tau_r)^{\frac{e(r-1)}{(e\wedge r)}}$
$B(1,1,r)$		$2, 3, \ldots, r+1$	$0, 1, \ldots, r-1$	$(\tau_1\cdots\tau_r)^{r+1}$
$B(d,1,r)$ $d>1$		$1, 2, \ldots, r$	$0, , \ldots, (r-1)$	$(\sigma\tau_2\tau_3\cdots\tau_r)^r$
$B(e,e,r)$ $e\geq 2, r\geq 2$		$e, 2e, \ldots, (r-1)e, r$	$0, e, \ldots, (r-2)e, (r-1)e-r$	$(\tau_2\tau_2'\tau_3\cdots\tau_r)^{\frac{e(r-1)}{(e\wedge r)}}$

This table provides a complete list of the infinite families of braid diagrams and corresponding data. Note that the braid diagram $B(de,e,r)$ for $e=2, d>1$ can also be described by a diagram as the one used for $G(2d,2,r)$ in Table 2. Similarly, the diagram for $B(e,e,r)$, $e=2$, can also be described by the Coxeter diagram of type D_r. The list of exceptional diagrams is given by with tables 3 and 4.

References

[AtMD] M. Atiyah and I. G. MacDonald, *Introduction to commutative algebra,* Addison–Wesley, Reading, Mass. 1969.

[Au] M. Auslander, *On the purity of the branch locus,* Amer. J. of Math. **84** (1962), 116–125.

[Bena] D. Benard, *Polynomial Invariants of Finite Groups,* London Math. Soc. Lecture Note Series **190**, University Press, Cambridge, 1993.

[Ben] D. Benson, *Polynomial Invariants of Finite Groups,* London Math. Soc. Lecture Note Series **190**, University Press, Cambridge, 1993.

[Bes1] D. Bessis, *Sur le corps de définition d'un groupe de réflexions complexe,* Comm. in Algebra **25** (8) (1997), 2703–2716.

[Bes2] D. Bessis,, *The dual braid monoid,* Ann. Sci. École Norm. Sup. (4) **36** (2003), no. 5, 647–683.

[Bes3] D. Bessis,, *Finite complex arrangements are $K(\pi, 1)$,* arXiv:math. GT/0610777 (2007).

[BeMi] D. Bessis and J .Michel, *Explicit presentations for exceptional braid group,* Experiment. math. **13** (2004), 257–266.

[BoLeMi] C. Bonnafé, G. I. Lehrer, J. Michel, *Twisted invariant theory for reflection groups,* Nagoya Math. J. **182** (2006), 135–170.

[Bou1] N. Bourbaki, *Groupes et algèbres de Lie, chap. 4, 5 et 6,* Hermann, Paris, 1968.

[Bou2] N. Bourbaki, *Algèbre Commutative, chap. 5 et 6,* Hermann, Paris, 1968.

[Bou3] N. Bourbaki, *Algèbre commutative, chap. 8 et 9,* Masson, Paris, 1983.

[Bro1] M. Broué, *Reflection Groups, Braid Groups, Hecke Algebras, Finite Reductive Groups,* Current Developments in Mathematics, 2000 Harvard Univ. (B. Mazur, W. Schmidt, S. T. Yau) and M. I. T. (J. de Jong, D. Jerison, G. Lusztig) International Press, Boston (2001), 1–107.

[Bro2] M. Broué, *Introduction to Complex Reflection Groups and their Braid Groups,* Berkeley University (2008).

[BrMaMi] M. Broué, G. Malle and J. Michel, *Towards Spetses I,* Trans. Groups; **4** (2–3) (1999), 157–218.

[BrMaRo] M. Broué, G. Malle and R. Rouquier, *Complex reflection groups, braid groups, Hecke algebras,* J. reine angew. Math. **500** (1998), 127–190.

[BrMi] M. Broué and J. Michel, *Sur certains éléments réguliers des groupes de Weyl et les variétés de Deligne-Lusztig associées,* Progress in Math. **141** (1997), 73–140.

[Ch] C. Chevalley, *Invariants of finite groups generated by reflections,* Amer. J. Math **77** (1955), 778–782.

[Co] A. M. Cohen, *Finite complex reflection groups,* Ann. scient. Éc. Norm. Sup. **9** (1976), 379–436.

[CoHeLo] W. Couwenberg, G. Heckman and E. Looijenga, *Geometric structures on the complement of a projective arrangement,* Publ. Math. de l'IHES **101** (2005), 69–161.

[Cx] H. S. M. Coxeter, *Finite groups generated by unitary reflections,* Abh. math. Sem. Univ. Hamburg **31** (1967), 125–135.

[Del] P. Deligne, *Les immeubles des groupes de tresses généralisés,* Invent. Math. **17** (1972), 273–302.

[DeLo] J. Denef and F. Loeser, *Regular elements and monodromy of discriminants of finite reflection groups,* Indag. Mathem. **6** (2) (1995), 129–143.

[DiMi1] F. Digne and J. Michel, *Endomorphisms of Deligne-Lusztig varieties,* Nagoya Mathematical Journal **183** (2006), 35–103.

[DuOp] C. F. Dunkl and E. M. Opdam, *Dunkl operators for real for complex reflection groups,* Proc. London Math. Soc. (3) **86** (2003), 70–108.

[Ei] D. Eisenbud, *Commutative Algebra with a View Toward Algebraic Geometry,* Graduate Texts in Mathematics **150**, Springer Verlag, Berlin Heidelberg New–York, 1995.

[Gut] E. A. Gutkin, *Matrices connected with groups generated by mappings,* Func. Anal. and Appl. (Funkt. Anal. i Prilozhen) **7** (1973), 153–154 (81–82).

[Ja] N. Jacobson, *Basic Algebra II,* Freeman, San Francisco, 1980.

[Ka] R. Kane, *Reflection Groups and Invariant Theory,* CMS Books in Mathematics, Canadian mathematical society, 2001.

[Le] G. I. Lehrer, *A new proof of Steinberg's Fixed-point Theorem,* International Mathematics Research Notices **28** (2004), 1409–1411.

[LeMi] G. I. Lehrer and J. Michel, *Invariant theory and eigenspaces for unitary reflection groups,* C.R.Acad.Sc., Sér. I **336** (2003), 795–800.

[LeSp] G. I. Lehrer and T. Springer, *Reflection subquotients of unitary reflection groups,* Canad. J. Math. **51** (1999), 1175–1193.

[LeTa] G. I. Lehrer and D. E. Taylor, *Unitary Reflection Groups,* Australian Mathematical Society Lecture Series, Paperback , 2009.

[Ma1] G. Malle, *Spetses,* Doc. Math. ICM II (1998), 87–96.

[MaMi] G. Malle and J. Michel, *Constructing representations of Hecke algebras for complex reflection groups,* arXiv:0909.4040, (2009).

[Mat] H. Masumura, *Commutative ring theory,* Cambridge University Press, Cambridge studies in advanced mathematics 8, Cambridge, 1992.

[Mi] J. Michel, *Private communication,* 1990–2009.

[Op1] E. M. Opdam, *Complex Reflection Groups and Fake Degrees,* Unpublished manuscript (1998).

[Op2] E. M. Opdam, *Lectures on Dunkl operators for real and complex reflection groups,* MSJ Memoirs 8 (Monograph), Math. Soc. of Japan (2000).

[OrSo1] P. Orlik and L. Solomon, *Combinatorics and topology of complements of hyperplanes,* Invent. Math. **56** (1980), 167–189.

[OrSo2] P. Orlik and L. Solomon, *Unitary reflection groups and cohomology,* Invent. Math. **59** (1980), 77–94.

[OrSo3] P. Orlik and L. Solomon, *Braids and discriminants,* Braids (eds. J. S. Birman and A. Lebgober), Contemp. Math. **78** AMS, Providence (1988), 605–613.

[OrTe] P. Orlik and H. Terao, *Arrangements of hyperplanes,* Springer, Berlin - Heidelberg 1992).

[PiWe] A. Pianzola and A.Weiss, *Monstrous E10's and a generalization of a theorem of L. Solomon,* C. R. Math. Rep. Acad. Sci. Canada **11** (1989), 189–194.

[Se1] J.-P. Serre, *Groupes finis d'automorphismes d'anneaux locaux réguliers* Colloque d'Algèbre, École Normale Supérieure de Jeunes Filles, Paris, 1967.

[Se2] J.-P. Serre, *Algèbre locale – Multiplicités,* Springer, Berlin/New-York Springer Lect. Notes in Math. **11**, 1965.

[ShTo] G. C. Shephard and J. A. Todd, *Finite unitary reflection groups,* Canad. J. Math. **6** (1954), 274–304.

[So] L. Solomon, *Invariants of finite reflection groups,* Nagoya Math. J. **22** (1963), 57–64.

[Sp] T. A. Springer, *Regular elements of finite reflection groups,* Invent. Math. **25** (1974), 159–198.

[Sta] R. Stanley, *Relative invariants of finite groups generated by pseudoreflections,* J. of Algebra **49** (1977), 134–148.

[St] R. Steinberg, *Differential equations invariant under finite reflection groups,* Trans. Amer. Math. Soc. **112** (1964), 392–400.

Index

$(d_1^\vee, d_2^\vee, \ldots, d_r^\vee)$, 93
B^{ab}, 76
$E(X)$, 81
$G(de, e, r)$, 6
$G(g\phi, \zeta)$, 101
$I(\phi, \zeta)$, 97
$I^\vee(\phi, \zeta)$, 108
$V(g\phi, \zeta)$, 97
$\mathcal{A}(g\phi, \zeta)$, 101
$\varDelta$, 70
$\varDelta_{\mathfrak{p}}$, 70
$\mathrm{Deg}(\phi, \zeta)$, 97
$\mathrm{Feg}_X(q)$, 80
N^{hyp}, 68
N^{ref}, 68
$\mathbf{s}_{H,\gamma}$, 67
$\ell_{\mathfrak{p}}$, 76
$\pi_{H,\gamma}$, 67
$\theta_{\mathfrak{p}}$, 41
$j_{\mathfrak{p}}$, 41

A
Artin–like presentations, 77

B
Braid diagrams, 77
Braid group, 65
Braid reflection, 67

C
Chevalley theorem, 31
Codegrees, 93
Cohen–Seidenberg theorem, 12
Coinvariant algebra, 44

D
Decomposition group, 36
Degrees, 27
Differential operators, 46
Discriminant, 70
Distinguished reflection, 66

E
Exponents, 81

F
Fake degree, 80
Field of definition, 8

G
Galois twisting, 45
Generalized degrees, 61
Graded kG–module, 49
Graded algebra, 23
Graded character, 49
Graded dimension, 21
Graded modules, 20
Graded multiplicity, 49
Gutkin–Opdam matrix, 83

H
Harmonic elements, 48
Hilbert's Nullstellensatz, 18
Hilbert–Serre theorem, 23

I
Inertia group, 36

J
Jacobian, 27
Jacobson rings, 15

K
Koszul complex, 22
Krull dimension, 13

L
Length, 76
Linear characters, 41

N
Nakayama's lemma, 25

P
Pianzola–Weiss formula, 97
Poincaré duality, 74
Pure braid group, 65

R
Ramification and reflecting pairs, 39
Ramification index, 37
Reflecting hyperplane, 8
Reflecting line, 8
Reflecting pairs, 8
Reflection, 2
Regular braid automorphism, 115
Root, 2

S
Shephard–Todd classification, 6
Shephard–Todd/Chevalley–Serre theorem, 57
Shift, 21
Solomon theorem, 89
Steinberg theorem, 62
System of parameters, 28

T
Transvection, 2

Lecture Notes in Mathematics

For information about earlier volumes
please contact your bookseller or Springer
LNM Online archive: springerlink.com

Vol. 1805: F. Cao, Geometric Curve Evolution and Image Processing (2003)
Vol. 1806: H. Broer, I. Hoveijn. G. Lunther, G. Vegter, Bifurcations in Hamiltonian Systems. Computing Singularities by Gröbner Bases (2003)
Vol. 1807: V. D. Milman, G. Schechtman (Eds.), Geometric Aspects of Functional Analysis. Israel Seminar 2000-2002 (2003)
Vol. 1808: W. Schindler, Measures with Symmetry Properties (2003)
Vol. 1809: O. Steinbach, Stability Estimates for Hybrid Coupled Domain Decomposition Methods (2003)
Vol. 1810: J. Wengenroth, Derived Functors in Functional Analysis (2003)
Vol. 1811: J. Stevens, Deformations of Singularities (2003)
Vol. 1812: L. Ambrosio, K. Deckelnick, G. Dziuk, M. Mimura, V. A. Solonnikov, H. M. Soner, Mathematical Aspects of Evolving Interfaces. Madeira, Funchal, Portugal 2000. Editors: P. Colli, J. F. Rodrigues (2003)
Vol. 1813: L. Ambrosio, L. A. Caffarelli, Y. Brenier, G. Buttazzo, C. Villani, Optimal Transportation and its Applications. Martina Franca, Italy 2001. Editors: L. A. Caffarelli, S. Salsa (2003)
Vol. 1814: P. Bank, F. Baudoin, H. Föllmer, L.C.G. Rogers, M. Soner, N. Touzi, Paris-Princeton Lectures on Mathematical Finance 2002 (2003)
Vol. 1815: A. M. Vershik (Ed.), Asymptotic Combinatorics with Applications to Mathematical Physics. St. Petersburg, Russia 2001 (2003)
Vol. 1816: S. Albeverio, W. Schachermayer, M. Talagrand, Lectures on Probability Theory and Statistics. Ecole d'Eté de Probabilités de Saint-Flour XXX-2000. Editor: P. Bernard (2003)
Vol. 1817: E. Koelink, W. Van Assche (Eds.), Orthogonal Polynomials and Special Functions. Leuven 2002 (2003)
Vol. 1818: M. Bildhauer, Convex Variational Problems with Linear, nearly Linear and/or Anisotropic Growth Conditions (2003)
Vol. 1819: D. Masser, Yu. V. Nesterenko, H. P. Schlickewei, W. M. Schmidt, M. Waldschmidt, Diophantine Approximation. Cetraro, Italy 2000. Editors: F. Amoroso, U. Zannier (2003)
Vol. 1820: F. Hiai, H. Kosaki, Means of Hilbert Space Operators (2003)
Vol. 1821: S. Teufel, Adiabatic Perturbation Theory in Quantum Dynamics (2003)
Vol. 1822: S.-N. Chow, R. Conti, R. Johnson, J. Mallet-Paret, R. Nussbaum, Dynamical Systems. Cetraro, Italy 2000. Editors: J. W. Macki, P. Zecca (2003)
Vol. 1823: A. M. Anile, W. Allegretto, C. Ringhofer, Mathematical Problems in Semiconductor Physics. Cetraro, Italy 1998. Editor: A. M. Anile (2003)
Vol. 1824: J. A. Navarro González, J. B. Sancho de Salas, $\mathscr{C}^\infty$ – Differentiable Spaces (2003)
Vol. 1825: J. H. Bramble, A. Cohen, W. Dahmen, Multiscale Problems and Methods in Numerical Simulations, Martina Franca, Italy 2001. Editor: C. Canuto (2003)
Vol. 1826: K. Dohmen, Improved Bonferroni Inequalities via Abstract Tubes. Inequalities and Identities of Inclusion-Exclusion Type. VIII, 113 p, 2003.
Vol. 1827: K. M. Pilgrim, Combinations of Complex Dynamical Systems. IX, 118 p, 2003.
Vol. 1828: D. J. Green, Gröbner Bases and the Computation of Group Cohomology. XII, 138 p, 2003.
Vol. 1829: E. Altman, B. Gaujal, A. Hordijk, Discrete-Event Control of Stochastic Networks: Multimodularity and Regularity. XIV, 313 p, 2003.
Vol. 1830: M. I. Gil', Operator Functions and Localization of Spectra. XIV, 256 p, 2003.
Vol. 1831: A. Connes, J. Cuntz, E. Guentner, N. Higson, J. E. Kaminker, Noncommutative Geometry, Martina Franca, Italy 2002. Editors: S. Doplicher, L. Longo (2004)
Vol. 1832: J. Azéma, M. Émery, M. Ledoux, M. Yor (Eds.), Séminaire de Probabilités XXXVII (2003)
Vol. 1833: D.-Q. Jiang, M. Qian, M.-P. Qian, Mathematical Theory of Nonequilibrium Steady States. On the Frontier of Probability and Dynamical Systems. IX, 280 p, 2004.
Vol. 1834: Yo. Yomdin, G. Comte, Tame Geometry with Application in Smooth Analysis. VIII, 186 p, 2004.
Vol. 1835: O.T. Izhboldin, B. Kahn, N.A. Karpenko, A. Vishik, Geometric Methods in the Algebraic Theory of Quadratic Forms. Summer School, Lens, 2000. Editor: J.-P. Tignol (2004)
Vol. 1836: C. Năstăsescu, F. Van Oystaeyen, Methods of Graded Rings. XIII, 304 p, 2004.
Vol. 1837: S. Tavaré, O. Zeitouni, Lectures on Probability Theory and Statistics. Ecole d'Eté de Probabilités de Saint-Flour XXXI-2001. Editor: J. Picard (2004)
Vol. 1838: A.J. Ganesh, N.W. O'Connell, D.J. Wischik, Big Queues. XII, 254 p, 2004.
Vol. 1839: R. Gohm, Noncommutative Stationary Processes. VIII, 170 p, 2004.
Vol. 1840: B. Tsirelson, W. Werner, Lectures on Probability Theory and Statistics. Ecole d'Eté de Probabilités de Saint-Flour XXXII-2002. Editor: J. Picard (2004)
Vol. 1841: W. Reichel, Uniqueness Theorems for Variational Problems by the Method of Transformation Groups (2004)
Vol. 1842: T. Johnsen, A. L. Knutsen, K_3 Projective Models in Scrolls (2004)
Vol. 1843: B. Jefferies, Spectral Properties of Noncommuting Operators (2004)
Vol. 1844: K.F. Siburg, The Principle of Least Action in Geometry and Dynamics (2004)
Vol. 1845: Min Ho Lee, Mixed Automorphic Forms, Torus Bundles, and Jacobi Forms (2004)

Vol. 1846: H. Ammari, H. Kang, Reconstruction of Small Inhomogeneities from Boundary Measurements (2004)

Vol. 1847: T.R. Bielecki, T. Björk, M. Jeanblanc, M. Rutkowski, J.A. Scheinkman, W. Xiong, Paris-Princeton Lectures on Mathematical Finance 2003 (2004)

Vol. 1848: M. Abate, J. E. Fornaess, X. Huang, J. P. Rosay, A. Tumanov, Real Methods in Complex and CR Geometry, Martina Franca, Italy 2002. Editors: D. Zaitsev, G. Zampieri (2004)

Vol. 1849: Martin L. Brown, Heegner Modules and Elliptic Curves (2004)

Vol. 1850: V. D. Milman, G. Schechtman (Eds.), Geometric Aspects of Functional Analysis. Israel Seminar 2002-2003 (2004)

Vol. 1851: O. Catoni, Statistical Learning Theory and Stochastic Optimization (2004)

Vol. 1852: A.S. Kechris, B.D. Miller, Topics in Orbit Equivalence (2004)

Vol. 1853: Ch. Favre, M. Jonsson, The Valuative Tree (2004)

Vol. 1854: O. Saeki, Topology of Singular Fibers of Differential Maps (2004)

Vol. 1855: G. Da Prato, P.C. Kunstmann, I. Lasiecka, A. Lunardi, R. Schnaubelt, L. Weis, Functional Analytic Methods for Evolution Equations. Editors: M. Iannelli, R. Nagel, S. Piazzera (2004)

Vol. 1856: K. Back, T.R. Bielecki, C. Hipp, S. Peng, W. Schachermayer, Stochastic Methods in Finance, Bressanone/Brixen, Italy, 2003. Editors: M. Fritelli, W. Runggaldier (2004)

Vol. 1857: M. Émery, M. Ledoux, M. Yor (Eds.), Séminaire de Probabilités XXXVIII (2005)

Vol. 1858: A.S. Cherny, H.-J. Engelbert, Singular Stochastic Differential Equations (2005)

Vol. 1859: E. Letellier, Fourier Transforms of Invariant Functions on Finite Reductive Lie Algebras (2005)

Vol. 1860: A. Borisyuk, G.B. Ermentrout, A. Friedman, D. Terman, Tutorials in Mathematical Biosciences I. Mathematical Neurosciences (2005)

Vol. 1861: G. Benettin, J. Henrard, S. Kuksin, Hamiltonian Dynamics – Theory and Applications, Cetraro, Italy, 1999. Editor: A. Giorgilli (2005)

Vol. 1862: B. Helffer, F. Nier, Hypoelliptic Estimates and Spectral Theory for Fokker-Planck Operators and Witten Laplacians (2005)

Vol. 1863: H. Führ, Abstract Harmonic Analysis of Continuous Wavelet Transforms (2005)

Vol. 1864: K. Efstathiou, Metamorphoses of Hamiltonian Systems with Symmetries (2005)

Vol. 1865: D. Applebaum, B.V. R. Bhat, J. Kustermans, J. M. Lindsay, Quantum Independent Increment Processes I. From Classical Probability to Quantum Stochastic Calculus. Editors: M. Schürmann, U. Franz (2005)

Vol. 1866: O.E. Barndorff-Nielsen, U. Franz, R. Gohm, B. Kümmerer, S. Thorbjønsen, Quantum Independent Increment Processes II. Structure of Quantum Lévy Processes, Classical Probability, and Physics. Editors: M. Schürmann, U. Franz, (2005)

Vol. 1867: J. Sneyd (Ed.), Tutorials in Mathematical Biosciences II. Mathematical Modeling of Calcium Dynamics and Signal Transduction. (2005)

Vol. 1868: J. Jorgenson, S. Lang, Pos_n(R) and Eisenstein Series. (2005)

Vol. 1869: A. Dembo, T. Funaki, Lectures on Probability Theory and Statistics. Ecole d'Eté de Probabilités de Saint-Flour XXXIII-2003. Editor: J. Picard (2005)

Vol. 1870: V.I. Gurariy, W. Lusky, Geometry of Müntz Spaces and Related Questions. (2005)

Vol. 1871: P. Constantin, G. Gallavotti, A.V. Kazhikhov, Y. Meyer, S. Ukai, Mathematical Foundation of Turbulent Viscous Flows, Martina Franca, Italy, 2003. Editors: M. Cannone, T. Miyakawa (2006)

Vol. 1872: A. Friedman (Ed.), Tutorials in Mathematical Biosciences III. Cell Cycle, Proliferation, and Cancer (2006)

Vol. 1873: R. Mansuy, M. Yor, Random Times and Enlargements of Filtrations in a Brownian Setting (2006)

Vol. 1874: M. Yor, M. Émery (Eds.), In Memoriam Paul-André Meyer - Séminaire de Probabilités XXXIX (2006)

Vol. 1875: J. Pitman, Combinatorial Stochastic Processes. Ecole d'Eté de Probabilités de Saint-Flour XXXII-2002. Editor: J. Picard (2006)

Vol. 1876: H. Herrlich, Axiom of Choice (2006)

Vol. 1877: J. Steuding, Value Distributions of L-Functions (2007)

Vol. 1878: R. Cerf, The Wulff Crystal in Ising and Percolation Models, Ecole d'Eté de Probabilités de Saint-Flour XXXIV-2004. Editor: Jean Picard (2006)

Vol. 1879: G. Slade, The Lace Expansion and its Applications, Ecole d'Eté de Probabilités de Saint-Flour XXXIV-2004. Editor: Jean Picard (2006)

Vol. 1880: S. Attal, A. Joye, C.-A. Pillet, Open Quantum Systems I, The Hamiltonian Approach (2006)

Vol. 1881: S. Attal, A. Joye, C.-A. Pillet, Open Quantum Systems II, The Markovian Approach (2006)

Vol. 1882: S. Attal, A. Joye, C.-A. Pillet, Open Quantum Systems III, Recent Developments (2006)

Vol. 1883: W. Van Assche, F. Marcellàn (Eds.), Orthogonal Polynomials and Special Functions, Computation and Application (2006)

Vol. 1884: N. Hayashi, E.I. Kaikina, P.I. Naumkin, I.A. Shishmarev, Asymptotics for Dissipative Nonlinear Equations (2006)

Vol. 1885: A. Telcs, The Art of Random Walks (2006)

Vol. 1886: S. Takamura, Splitting Deformations of Degenerations of Complex Curves (2006)

Vol. 1887: K. Habermann, L. Habermann, Introduction to Symplectic Dirac Operators (2006)

Vol. 1888: J. van der Hoeven, Transseries and Real Differential Algebra (2006)

Vol. 1889: G. Osipenko, Dynamical Systems, Graphs, and Algorithms (2006)

Vol. 1890: M. Bunge, J. Funk, Singular Coverings of Toposes (2006)

Vol. 1891: J.B. Friedlander, D.R. Heath-Brown, H. Iwaniec, J. Kaczorowski, Analytic Number Theory, Cetraro, Italy, 2002. Editors: A. Perelli, C. Viola (2006)

Vol. 1892: A. Baddeley, I. Bárány, R. Schneider, W. Weil, Stochastic Geometry, Martina Franca, Italy, 2004. Editor: W. Weil (2007)

Vol. 1893: H. Hanßmann, Local and Semi-Local Bifurcations in Hamiltonian Dynamical Systems, Results and Examples (2007)

Vol. 1894: C.W. Groetsch, Stable Approximate Evaluation of Unbounded Operators (2007)

Vol. 1895: L. Molnár, Selected Preserver Problems on Algebraic Structures of Linear Operators and on Function Spaces (2007)

Vol. 1896: P. Massart, Concentration Inequalities and Model Selection, Ecole d'Été de Probabilités de Saint-Flour XXXIII-2003. Editor: J. Picard (2007)

Vol. 1897: R. Doney, Fluctuation Theory for Lévy Processes, Ecole d'Été de Probabilités de Saint-Flour XXXV-2005. Editor: J. Picard (2007)
Vol. 1898: H.R. Beyer, Beyond Partial Differential Equations, On linear and Quasi-Linear Abstract Hyperbolic Evolution Equations (2007)
Vol. 1899: Séminaire de Probabilités XL. Editors: C. Donati-Martin, M. Émery, A. Rouault, C. Stricker (2007)
Vol. 1900: E. Bolthausen, A. Bovier (Eds.), Spin Glasses (2007)
Vol. 1901: O. Wittenberg, Intersections de deux quadriques et pinceaux de courbes de genre 1, Intersections of Two Quadrics and Pencils of Curves of Genus 1 (2007)
Vol. 1902: A. Isaev, Lectures on the Automorphism Groups of Kobayashi-Hyperbolic Manifolds (2007)
Vol. 1903: G. Kresin, V. Maz'ya, Sharp Real-Part Theorems (2007)
Vol. 1904: P. Giesl, Construction of Global Lyapunov Functions Using Radial Basis Functions (2007)
Vol. 1905: C. Prévôt, M. Röckner, A Concise Course on Stochastic Partial Differential Equations (2007)
Vol. 1906: T. Schuster, The Method of Approximate Inverse: Theory and Applications (2007)
Vol. 1907: M. Rasmussen, Attractivity and Bifurcation for Nonautonomous Dynamical Systems (2007)
Vol. 1908: T.J. Lyons, M. Caruana, T. Lévy, Differential Equations Driven by Rough Paths, Ecole d'Été de Probabilités de Saint-Flour XXXIV-2004 (2007)
Vol. 1909: H. Akiyoshi, M. Sakuma, M. Wada, Y. Yamashita, Punctured Torus Groups and 2-Bridge Knot Groups (I) (2007)
Vol. 1910: V.D. Milman, G. Schechtman (Eds.), Geometric Aspects of Functional Analysis. Israel Seminar 2004-2005 (2007)
Vol. 1911: A. Bressan, D. Serre, M. Williams, K. Zumbrun, Hyperbolic Systems of Balance Laws. Cetraro, Italy 2003. Editor: P. Marcati (2007)
Vol. 1912: V. Berinde, Iterative Approximation of Fixed Points (2007)
Vol. 1913: J.E. Marsden, G. Misiołek, J.-P. Ortega, M. Perlmutter, T.S. Ratiu, Hamiltonian Reduction by Stages (2007)
Vol. 1914: G. Kutyniok, Affine Density in Wavelet Analysis (2007)
Vol. 1915: T. Bıyıkoğlu, J. Leydold, P.F. Stadler, Laplacian Eigenvectors of Graphs. Perron-Frobenius and Faber-Krahn Type Theorems (2007)
Vol. 1916: C. Villani, F. Rezakhanlou, Entropy Methods for the Boltzmann Equation. Editors: F. Golse, S. Olla (2008)
Vol. 1917: I. Veselić, Existence and Regularity Properties of the Integrated Density of States of Random Schrödinger (2008)
Vol. 1918: B. Roberts, R. Schmidt, Local Newforms for GSp(4) (2007)
Vol. 1919: R.A. Carmona, I. Ekeland, A. Kohatsu-Higa, J.-M. Lasry, P.-L. Lions, H. Pham, E. Taflin, Paris-Princeton Lectures on Mathematical Finance 2004. Editors: R.A. Carmona, E. Çinlar, I. Ekeland, E. Jouini, J.A. Scheinkman, N. Touzi (2007)
Vol. 1920: S.N. Evans, Probability and Real Trees. Ecole d'Été de Probabilités de Saint-Flour XXXV-2005 (2008)
Vol. 1921: J.P. Tian, Evolution Algebras and their Applications (2008)
Vol. 1922: A. Friedman (Ed.), Tutorials in Mathematical BioSciences IV. Evolution and Ecology (2008)
Vol. 1923: J.P.N. Bishwal, Parameter Estimation in Stochastic Differential Equations (2008)
Vol. 1924: M. Wilson, Littlewood-Paley Theory and Exponential-Square Integrability (2008)
Vol. 1925: M. du Sautoy, L. Woodward, Zeta Functions of Groups and Rings (2008)
Vol. 1926: L. Barreira, V. Claudia, Stability of Nonautonomous Differential Equations (2008)
Vol. 1927: L. Ambrosio, L. Caffarelli, M.G. Crandall, L.C. Evans, N. Fusco, Calculus of Variations and Non-Linear Partial Differential Equations. Cetraro, Italy 2005. Editors: B. Dacorogna, P. Marcellini (2008)
Vol. 1928: J. Jonsson, Simplicial Complexes of Graphs (2008)
Vol. 1929: Y. Mishura, Stochastic Calculus for Fractional Brownian Motion and Related Processes (2008)
Vol. 1930: J.M. Urbano, The Method of Intrinsic Scaling. A Systematic Approach to Regularity for Degenerate and Singular PDEs (2008)
Vol. 1931: M. Cowling, E. Frenkel, M. Kashiwara, A. Valette, D.A. Vogan, Jr., N.R. Wallach, Representation Theory and Complex Analysis. Venice, Italy 2004. Editors: E.C. Tarabusi, A. D'Agnolo, M. Picardello (2008)
Vol. 1932: A.A. Agrachev, A.S. Morse, E.D. Sontag, H.J. Sussmann, V.I. Utkin, Nonlinear and Optimal Control Theory. Cetraro, Italy 2004. Editors: P. Nistri, G. Stefani (2008)
Vol. 1933: M. Petkovic, Point Estimation of Root Finding Methods (2008)
Vol. 1934: C. Donati-Martin, M. Émery, A. Rouault, C. Stricker (Eds.), Séminaire de Probabilités XLI (2008)
Vol. 1935: A. Unterberger, Alternative Pseudodifferential Analysis (2008)
Vol. 1936: P. Magal, S. Ruan (Eds.), Structured Population Models in Biology and Epidemiology (2008)
Vol. 1937: G. Capriz, P. Giovine, P.M. Mariano (Eds.), Mathematical Models of Granular Matter (2008)
Vol. 1938: D. Auroux, F. Catanese, M. Manetti, P. Seidel, B. Siebert, I. Smith, G. Tian, Symplectic 4-Manifolds and Algebraic Surfaces. Cetraro, Italy 2003. Editors: F. Catanese, G. Tian (2008)
Vol. 1939: D. Boffi, F. Brezzi, L. Demkowicz, R.G. Durán, R.S. Falk, M. Fortin, Mixed Finite Elements, Compatibility Conditions, and Applications. Cetraro, Italy 2006. Editors: D. Boffi, L. Gastaldi (2008)
Vol. 1940: J. Banasiak, V. Capasso, M.A.J. Chaplain, M. Lachowicz, J. Miękisz, Multiscale Problems in the Life Sciences. From Microscopic to Macroscopic. Będlewo, Poland 2006. Editors: V. Capasso, M. Lachowicz (2008)
Vol. 1941: S.M.J. Haran, Arithmetical Investigations. Representation Theory, Orthogonal Polynomials, and Quantum Interpolations (2008)
Vol. 1942: S. Albeverio, F. Flandoli, Y.G. Sinai, SPDE in Hydrodynamic. Recent Progress and Prospects. Cetraro, Italy 2005. Editors: G. Da Prato, M. Röckner (2008)
Vol. 1943: L.L. Bonilla (Ed.), Inverse Problems and Imaging. Martina Franca, Italy 2002 (2008)
Vol. 1944: A. Di Bartolo, G. Falcone, P. Plaumann, K. Strambach, Algebraic Groups and Lie Groups with Few Factors (2008)
Vol. 1945: F. Brauer, P. van den Driessche, J. Wu (Eds.), Mathematical Epidemiology (2008)

Vol. 1946: G. Allaire, A. Arnold, P. Degond, T.Y. Hou, Quantum Transport. Modelling, Analysis and Asymptotics. Cetraro, Italy 2006. Editors: N.B. Abdallah, G. Frosali (2008)
Vol. 1947: D. Abramovich, M. Mariño, M. Thaddeus, R. Vakil, Enumerative Invariants in Algebraic Geometry and String Theory. Cetraro, Italy 2005. Editors: K. Behrend, M. Manetti (2008)
Vol. 1948: F. Cao, J-L. Lisani, J-M. Morel, P. Musé, F. Sur, A Theory of Shape Identification (2008)
Vol. 1949: H.G. Feichtinger, B. Helffer, M.P. Lamoureux, N. Lerner, J. Toft, Pseudo-Differential Operators. Quantization and Signals. Cetraro, Italy 2006. Editors: L. Rodino, M.W. Wong (2008)
Vol. 1950: M. Bramson, Stability of Queueing Networks, Ecole d'Eté de Probabilités de Saint-Flour XXXVI-2006 (2008)
Vol. 1951: A. Moltó, J. Orihuela, S. Troyanski, M. Valdivia, A Non Linear Transfer Technique for Renorming (2009)
Vol. 1952: R. Mikhailov, I.B.S. Passi, Lower Central and Dimension Series of Groups (2009)
Vol. 1953: K. Arwini, C.T.J. Dodson, Information Geometry (2008)
Vol. 1954: P. Biane, L. Bouten, F. Cipriani, N. Konno, N. Privault, Q. Xu, Quantum Potential Theory. Editors: U. Franz, M. Schuermann (2008)
Vol. 1955: M. Bernot, V. Caselles, J.-M. Morel, Optimal Transportation Networks (2008)
Vol. 1956: C.H. Chu, Matrix Convolution Operators on Groups (2008)
Vol. 1957: A. Guionnet, On Random Matrices: Macroscopic Asymptotics, Ecole d'Eté de Probabilités de Saint-Flour XXXVI-2006 (2009)
Vol. 1958: M.C. Olsson, Compactifying Moduli Spaces for Abelian Varieties (2008)
Vol. 1959: Y. Nakkajima, A. Shiho, Weight Filtrations on Log Crystalline Cohomologies of Families of Open Smooth Varieties (2008)
Vol. 1960: J. Lipman, M. Hashimoto, Foundations of Grothendieck Duality for Diagrams of Schemes (2009)
Vol. 1961: G. Buttazzo, A. Pratelli, S. Solimini, E. Stepanov, Optimal Urban Networks via Mass Transportation (2009)
Vol. 1962: R. Dalang, D. Khoshnevisan, C. Mueller, D. Nualart, Y. Xiao, A Minicourse on Stochastic Partial Differential Equations (2009)
Vol. 1963: W. Siegert, Local Lyapunov Exponents (2009)
Vol. 1964: W. Roth, Operator-valued Measures and Integrals for Cone-valued Functions and Integrals for Cone-valued Functions (2009)
Vol. 1965: C. Chidume, Geometric Properties of Banach Spaces and Nonlinear Iterations (2009)
Vol. 1966: D. Deng, Y. Han, Harmonic Analysis on Spaces of Homogeneous Type (2009)
Vol. 1967: B. Fresse, Modules over Operads and Functors (2009)
Vol. 1968: R. Weissauer, Endoscopy for GSP(4) and the Cohomology of Siegel Modular Threefolds (2009)
Vol. 1969: B. Roynette, M. Yor, Penalising Brownian Paths (2009)
Vol. 1970: M. Biskup, A. Bovier, F. den Hollander, D. Ioffe, F. Martinelli, K. Netočný, F. Toninelli, Methods of Contemporary Mathematical Statistical Physics. Editor: R. Kotecký (2009)
Vol. 1971: L. Saint-Raymond, Hydrodynamic Limits of the Boltzmann Equation (2009)
Vol. 1972: T. Mochizuki, Donaldson Type Invariants for Algebraic Surfaces (2009)
Vol. 1973: M.A. Berger, L.H. Kauffmann, B. Khesin, H.K. Moffatt, R.L. Ricca, De W. Sumners, Lectures on Topological Fluid Mechanics. Cetraro, Italy 2001. Editor: R.L. Ricca (2009)
Vol. 1974: F. den Hollander, Random Polymers: École d'Été de Probabilités de Saint-Flour XXXVII – 2007 (2009)
Vol. 1975: J.C. Rohde, Cyclic Coverings, Calabi-Yau Manifolds and Complex Multiplication (2009)
Vol. 1976: N. Ginoux, The Dirac Spectrum (2009)
Vol. 1977: M.J. Gursky, E. Lanconelli, A. Malchiodi, G. Tarantello, X.-J. Wang, P.C. Yang, Geometric Analysis and PDEs. Cetraro, Italy 2001. Editors: A. Ambrosetti, S.-Y.A. Chang, A. Malchiodi (2009)
Vol. 1978: M. Qian, J.-S. Xie, S. Zhu, Smooth Ergodic Theory for Endomorphisms (2009)
Vol. 1979: C. Donati-Martin, M. Émery, A. Rouault, C. Stricker (Eds.), Śeminaire de Probablitiés XLII (2009)
Vol. 1980: P. Graczyk, A. Stos (Eds.), Potential Analysis of Stable Processes and its Extensions (2009)
Vol. 1981: M. Chlouveraki, Blocks and Families for Cyclotomic Hecke Algebras (2009)
Vol. 1982: N. Privault, Stochastic Analysis in Discrete and Continuous Settings. With Normal Martingales (2009)
Vol. 1983: H. Ammari (Ed.), Mathematical Modeling in Biomedical Imaging I. Electrical and Ultrasound Tomographies, Anomaly Detection, and Brain Imaging (2009)
Vol. 1984: V. Caselles, P. Monasse, Geometric Description of Images as Topographic Maps (2010)
Vol. 1985: T. Linß, Layer-Adapted Meshes for Reaction-Convection-Diffusion Problems (2010)
Vol. 1986: J.-P. Antoine, C. Trapani, Partial Inner Product Spaces. Theory and Applications (2009)
Vol. 1987: J.-P. Brasselet, J. Seade, T. Suwa, Vector Fields on Singular Varieties (2010)
Vol. 1988: M. Broué, Introduction to Complex Reflection Groups and Their Braid Groups (2010)

Recent Reprints and New Editions

Vol. 1702: J. Ma, J. Yong, Forward-Backward Stochastic Differential Equations and their Applications. 1999 – Corr. 3rd printing (2007)
Vol. 830: J.A. Green, Polynomial Representations of GL_n, with an Appendix on Schensted Correspondence and Littelmann Paths by K. Erdmann, J.A. Green and M. Schoker 1980 – 2nd corr. and augmented edition (2007)
Vol. 1693: S. Simons, From Hahn-Banach to Monotonicity (Minimax and Monotonicity 1998) – 2nd exp. edition (2008)
Vol. 470: R.E. Bowen, Equilibrium States and the Ergodic Theory of Anosov Diffeomorphisms. With a preface by D. Ruelle. Edited by J.-R. Chazottes. 1975 – 2nd rev. edition (2008)
Vol. 523: S.A. Albeverio, R.J. Høegh-Krohn, S. Mazzucchi, Mathematical Theory of Feynman Path Integral. 1976 – 2nd corr. and enlarged edition (2008)
Vol. 1764: A. Cannas da Silva, Lectures on Symplectic Geometry 2001 – Corr. 2nd printing (2008)

Springer

Edited by J.-M. Morel, F. Takens, B. Teissier, P.K. Maini

Editorial Policy (for the publication of monographs)

1. Lecture Notes aim to report new developments in all areas of mathematics and their applications - quickly, informally and at a high level. Mathematical texts analysing new developments in modelling and numerical simulation are welcome.

   Monograph manuscripts should be reasonably self-contained and rounded off. Thus they may, and often will, present not only results of the author but also related work by other people. They may be based on specialised lecture courses. Furthermore, the manuscripts should provide sufficient motivation, examples and applications. This clearly distinguishes Lecture Notes from journal articles or technical reports which normally are very concise. Articles intended for a journal but too long to be accepted by most journals, usually do not have this "lecture notes" character. For similar reasons it is unusual for doctoral theses to be accepted for the Lecture Notes series, though habilitation theses may be appropriate.

2. Manuscripts should be submitted either online at www.editorialmanager.com/lnm to Springer's mathematics editorial in Heidelberg, or to one of the series editors. In general, manuscripts will be sent out to 2 external referees for evaluation. If a decision cannot yet be reached on the basis of the first 2 reports, further referees may be contacted: The author will be informed of this. A final decision to publish can be made only on the basis of the complete manuscript, however a refereeing process leading to a preliminary decision can be based on a pre-final or incomplete manuscript. The strict minimum amount of material that will be considered should include a detailed outline describing the planned contents of each chapter, a bibliography and several sample chapters.

   Authors should be aware that incomplete or insufficiently close to final manuscripts almost always result in longer refereeing times and nevertheless unclear referees' recommendations, making further refereeing of a final draft necessary.

   Authors should also be aware that parallel submission of their manuscript to another publisher while under consideration for LNM will in general lead to immediate rejection.

3. Manuscripts should in general be submitted in English. Final manuscripts should contain at least 100 pages of mathematical text and should always include

   – a table of contents;
   – an informative introduction, with adequate motivation and perhaps some historical remarks: it should be accessible to a reader not intimately familiar with the topic treated;
   – a subject index: as a rule this is genuinely helpful for the reader.

   For evaluation purposes, manuscripts may be submitted in print or electronic form (print form is still preferred by most referees), in the latter case preferably as pdf- or zipped ps-files. Lecture Notes volumes are, as a rule, printed digitally from the authors' files. To ensure best results, authors are asked to use the LaTeX2e style files available from Springer's web-server at:

   ftp://ftp.springer.de/pub/tex/latex/svmonot1/ (for monographs) and
   ftp://ftp.springer.de/pub/tex/latex/svmultt1/ (for summer schools/tutorials).

Additional technical instructions, if necessary, are available on request from: lnm@springer.com.

4. Careful preparation of the manuscripts will help keep production time short besides ensuring satisfactory appearance of the finished book in print and online. After acceptance of the manuscript authors will be asked to prepare the final LaTeX source files and also the corresponding dvi-, pdf- or zipped ps-file. The LaTeX source files are essential for producing the full-text online version of the book (see http://www.springerlink.com/openurl.asp?genre=journal&issn=0075-8434 for the existing online volumes of LNM).

   The actual production of a Lecture Notes volume takes approximately 12 weeks.

5. Authors receive a total of 50 free copies of their volume, but no royalties. They are entitled to a discount of 33.3% on the price of Springer books purchased for their personal use, if ordering directly from Springer.

6. Commitment to publish is made by letter of intent rather than by signing a formal contract. Springer-Verlag secures the copyright for each volume. Authors are free to reuse material contained in their LNM volumes in later publications: a brief written (or e-mail) request for formal permission is sufficient.

Addresses:

Professor J.-M. Morel, CMLA,
École Normale Supérieure de Cachan,
61 Avenue du Président Wilson, 94235 Cachan Cedex, France
E-mail: Jean-Michel.Morel@cmla.ens-cachan.fr

Professor F. Takens, Mathematisch Instituut,
Rijksuniversiteit Groningen, Postbus 800,
9700 AV Groningen, The Netherlands
E-mail: F.Takens@rug.nl

Professor B. Teissier, Institut Mathématique de Jussieu,
UMR 7586 du CNRS, Équipe "Géométrie et Dynamique",
175 rue du Chevaleret,
75013 Paris, France
E-mail: teissier@math.jussieu.fr

For the "Mathematical Biosciences Subseries" of LNM:

Professor P.K. Maini, Center for Mathematical Biology,
Mathematical Institute, 24-29 St Giles,
Oxford OX1 3LP, UK
E-mail: maini@maths.ox.ac.uk

Springer, Mathematics Editorial, Tiergartenstr. 17,
69121 Heidelberg, Germany,
Tel.: +49 (6221) 487-259
Fax: +49 (6221) 4876-8259
E-mail: lnm@springer.com